



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

the 1990s, the number of people in the world who are undernourished has increased from 600 million to 800 million.

There are a number of reasons for this increase. One of the main reasons is that the world's population has grown by 1.5 billion in the last 20 years. This has put a huge strain on the world's food supply, and has led to a sharp increase in the number of people who are undernourished.

Another reason for the increase is that the world's food supply is becoming increasingly unstable. This is due to a number of factors, including climate change, which is causing more frequent and severe droughts and floods, and the depletion of the world's fisheries.

Finally, the world's food supply is becoming increasingly expensive. This is due to a number of factors, including the increase in the cost of fertilizers and pesticides, and the increase in the cost of transporting food from the fields to the tables.

All of these factors are contributing to the increase in the number of people who are undernourished. It is a serious problem that needs to be addressed, and it is the responsibility of all of us to do our part to help solve it.

There are a number of things that we can do to help solve the problem of undernutrition. One of the most important things is to increase the world's food supply. This can be done by increasing the amount of land that is used for agriculture, and by improving the way that we use the land that we have.

Another important thing that we can do is to improve the way that we distribute food. This can be done by reducing the amount of food that is wasted, and by ensuring that food is distributed to the people who need it most.

Finally, we can also help to solve the problem of undernutrition by improving the health of the world's population. This can be done by ensuring that everyone has access to clean water and sanitation, and by providing access to healthcare for all.

It is a huge task, but it is one that we must undertake if we are to ensure that everyone has access to the food that they need to live. It is the responsibility of all of us to do our part to help solve this problem.

There are a number of organizations that are working to help solve the problem of undernutrition. These include the United Nations, the World Bank, and a number of non-governmental organizations.

It is important that we all work together to help solve this problem. We need to ensure that everyone has access to the food that they need to live, and that we are all doing our part to help solve this problem.

Undernutrition is a serious problem that needs to be addressed. It is the responsibility of all of us to do our part to help solve it. We need to ensure that everyone has access to the food that they need to live, and that we are all doing our part to help solve this problem.

It is a huge task, but it is one that we must undertake if we are to ensure that everyone has access to the food that they need to live. It is the responsibility of all of us to do our part to help solve this problem.

## Harvard College Library



### FROM THE BRIGHT LEGACY

One half the income from this Legacy, which was received in 1880 under the will of

**JONATHAN BROWN BRIGHT**  
of Waltham, Massachusetts, is to be expended for books for the College Library. The other half of the income is devoted to scholarships in Harvard University for the benefit of descendants of

**HENRY BRIGHT, JR.,**  
who died at Watertown, Massachusetts, in 1686. In the absence of such descendants, other persons are eligible to the scholarships. The will requires that this announcement shall be made in every book added to the Library under its provisions.



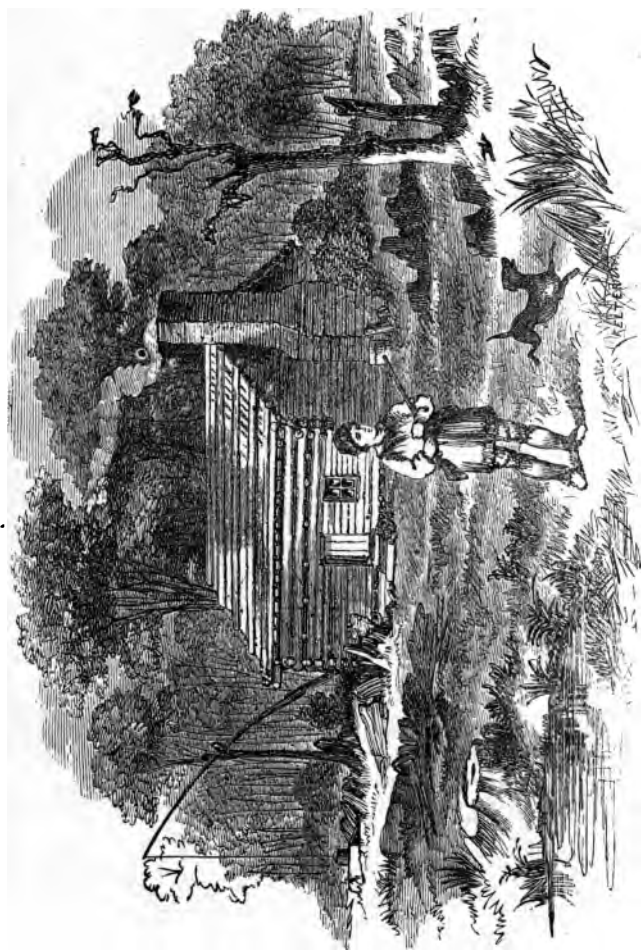


2









HOME OF THE PIONEER.

HISTORY  
OF  
KANAWHA COUNTY,

FROM

ITS ORGANIZATION IN 1789 UNTIL THE PRESENT TIME;

EMBRACING

ACCOUNTS OF EARLY SETTLEMENTS, AND THRILLING ADVENTURES WITH  
THE INDIANS, DERIVED FROM HISTORY  
AND AGED CITIZENS.

ALSO,

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF A LARGE NUMBER OF THE EARLY  
SETTLERS OF THE GREAT KANAWHA VALLEY.

ILLUSTRATED BY NUMEROUS ENGRAVINGS.

BY GEO. W. ATKINSON, A. M.

---

CHARLESTON:  
PRINTED AT THE OFFICE OF THE WEST VIRGINIA JOURNAL.

1876.

~~12367.55~~  
US 23801.3.



*Engel - 4*

---

Entered according to Act of Congress in the year 1876, by  
GEORGE WESLEY ATKINSON,  
In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington, D. C.

---

12367.55  
US 23801.3

TO  
*MY WIFE AND MOTHER,*  
THE BEST FRIENDS  
I HAVE ON EARTH,  
THIS VOLUME IS AFFECTIONATELY DEDICATED,  
BY THE  
AUTHOR.

## ERRATA.

---

In the fourteenth line of the first paragraph of chapter II, the word "east" should be "west." The word "not," in the same line, should be stricken out, and the word "afterwards" inserted; also, in the same line, after Augusta, add the words, "and Frederick." After the word "Montgomery," in twentieth line of same paragraph, add "Washington." In the line following, I should have said that Greenbrier county was formed from Botetourt and Montgomery, they having been taken from the territory of West Augusta a few months previous to the organization of Greenbrier. The word "originally," in the twelfth line, should be stricken out for the reason that at one time Orange county embraced all the territory of Virginia west of the Allegheny mountains. On page twenty-eight, in second line of second paragraph, read "that," instead of "who." On page twenty-nine, under head of Putnam county, at end of first line, the preposition "of" should be stricken out. On the same page, in first line of paragraph, under head of "Gilmer county," a similar error occurs. The date in the third line of the third paragraph, on page 330, should be "1869," instead of "1864." The headings of Chapter XX appear as "Resources of the Kanawha Valley," when they should have been "Biographical Sketches."

## PREFACE.

---

In presenting the History of Kanawha County to the Public, I regret my inability to make it as complete and perfect a record of the settlement and growth of the county as I would have been pleased to make it. I have, however, searched the early records of the county, and conversed with many aged citizens, who grew up within its limits, and in fact constituted much of its history—thus securing many facts which were fading from the memory of those who are ripening for the grave. I have narrated events as our pioneer fathers had preserved them by tradition ; and, while some of them may be imperfect, they may nevertheless, in their main features, be relied upon as correct. I have done no individual or family intentional injustice, nor have I “set down aught in malice.”

In the outset I intended to prepare a brief historical sketch of the county : but finding, on careful research, a much larger amount of valuable material than I had anticipated, I have prepared the present volume, which I trust will not be discreditable to the second county in wealth and population in the State. How well I have succeeded in my undertaking is for the reader to judge. I am, however, gratified over the fact that I have placed on record, in permanent shape, many important occurrences which, ere another decade had passed away, would have been buried in oblivion.

In the preparation of this volume, I have aimed to give proper credit for everything taken from others. I am under many obligations to a number of citizens of Charleston for information and courtesies extended to me, for which I make this public acknowledgment.

The hurried manner in which the copy for this volume was prepared, and the haste required in reading the proof-sheets, owing to the press of other business, which could not be neglected, are my excuses for such errors as the reader may find in these pages. The publication, in book form, at this time, is merely incidental ; and I regret that I have been unable to give it more care and critical attention.

G. W. A.

CHARLESTON, November, 1876.

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

✓	HOME OF THE PIONEER.....	<i>To Face Title Page</i>
✓	BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT.....	" <i>Page</i> 34
✓	SCHOOL AND MEETING HOUSE.....	106
✓	TUB MILL.....	107
✓	THE BLOCK-HOUSE.....	<i>To Face Page</i> 108
✓	THE HERMIT.....	" 110
✓	SURPRISING AN INDIAN CAMP.....	" 116
✓	DEATH OF WILLIAM WYATT.....	" 132
✓	CAPTURE OF LEWIS TACKETT.....	" 136
✓	SUGAR MAKING, THE OLD WAY.....	189

# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### ORGANIZATION OF THE COUNTY.

Original Boundary—Great Kanawha River—New River and its Peculiarities—Elk River, its Fall, Timber, Coal, etc.—Elk Valley—Gauley River, its Natural Fortifications, etc.—Coal River, its Cannel Coal, Forests and Farms—The Coal River Port—Lewis Tackett—The Destruction of the Fort by the Indians—Miraculous Escape of John Young, with his wife and Child a few hours old—Jacob Young, "the Child of the Storm"—Pocatallco River and Valley—Kanawha's Present Rank as a County..... 9

## CHAPTER II.

### COUNTIES FORMED FROM KANAWHA.

West Augusta, the Parent of all the Counties of Western Virginia—Formation of Mason County in 1804, its Original Area, Population, etc.—Point Pleasant, Mason City, Clifton, West Columbia, Hartford City, New Haven, and their Manufactures—A Shawnee Indian Town—Cabell County, its Organization in 1809—Guyandotte, Barboursville and Huntington—Green Bottom—An Ancient City—Nicholas Founded in 1813—"The Glades"—An Ancient Lake—Logan Established in 1824—The Lewis Campaign—Tug River—A Peculiar kind of Food—Fayette Created in 1831—The Great Kanawha Falls—Hawk's Nest—Grand Scenery—Formation of Jackson in 1831—Ravenswood and Ripley—Braxton Organized in 1836, its Coal, Iron, Salt and Timber—Sutton and Bulltown—Boone Established in 1847—Its First Court of Justice, and Where Held—Juries Deliberate in the Bushes—Destruction of Court-house and Jail by Fire—Peytona—Incidents of Daniel Boone and Scrape from Early Records of Kanawha—Formation of Gilmer in 1843—Glenville—Putnam Established in 1848, its First Officers, etc.—Calhoun Created in 1855—Grantsville—Roane Founded in 1856, its Grazing Qualities, etc.—Spencer—Clay Organized in 1866—Occupation of its People—Formation of Lincoln, the youngest offspring of Kanawha, in 1867—Mud River—Hamlin—Present Area of Kanawha County, etc..... 16

## CHAPTER III.

### BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT.

Formation of the Army—Lord Dunmore and General Lewis to form a junction at the Mouth of the Kanawha—Lewis' March from Fort Union—Captain Arbuckle as Guide—Lord Dunmore moves towards the Shawnee Towns on the Scioto—Two Soldiers fired upon by the Indians—The Beginning of the Battle—The 10th of October, the Great Field Day—Death of Colonel Charles Lewis and Colonel Fleming—Tactics of General Lewis—Plan of the Battle—Consternation and Defeat of the Indians—The Dead and Wounded—Cornstalk, the Great Chief, in Command of the Indians—VanBibber's Account of the Battle—The Centennial Celebration—A Monument to be Erected..... 33

## CHAPTER IV.

### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The Frontiersmen, their Peculiarities and Dispositions—Backwoods Life and its Sequences—Early Settlement of the Great Kanawha Valley—The Era of Peace broken—Stroud, the Pioneer—His Settlement on the Gauley River in 1773—The Massacre of his Family—Retaliation by the Whites—The Destruction of the Bulltown Indian Tribe—Kelly's Creek Settlement in 1774—"Tomahawk" and "Corn" titles to Land—Murder of Kelly by the Indians—Narrow Escape of Captain Field—Subsequent Murder of Kelly's Family—The Morris's, the first Permanent Settlers—Point Pleasant settled in 1774—Personal Incidents—Anecdotes of the VanBibbers—Eulen's Leap—Indian Incursions in 1791—Dunmore's Patent to Major Bullitt—The First Settlement at Charleston—The Clendennin Fort, the first house in Charleston—Other old Buildings—The Incorporation of "Charlestown" in 1794—Its first Trustees—Change of Name—The First Settlement on Elk River—O'Brien's Folly—Massacre of the Carpenters, etc., etc..... 43



## CHAPTER V.

## MURDER OF CORNSTALK.

Cornstalk and Redhawk visit Point Pleasant, and are detained as Hostages—Colonel Skillern marches toward the Ohio—Failure of General Hand to meet his engagement—Gilmore killed by bushwhacking Indians—Narrow Escape of Hamilton—Determination to kill the Indians in the Fort—Cornstalk's son, Elinipico—His fearfulness, and the coolness of Cornstalk—The atrocious Murder of the Hostages—Incidents of Cornstalk—His premonition of Death—Superstitions of the Old Settlers of Point Pleasant—Cornstalk's unpretentious Grave..... 61

## CHAPTER VI.

## A PIONEER WEDDING.

The diversity of customs—Entreaty with the Parson—He consents—His reception at the Settlement—Appearance of the matron—Excitement among the poultry—A calamity within the household—Coon-skin bed—Narrow escape—Dress and appearance of the Bride—How the Bridegroom was "fixed up"—A strange objection—The "tying of the knot"—The Parson's fee—The dance and jubilee, etc., etc..... 67

## CHAPTER VII.

## WILD GAME.

Adventures of Early Settlers—The Primeval Forests of the Valley—Beech Mast—Appearance of the Bottom on which Charleston now Stands—Herds of Bears—Their Tameness on Account of Fat—How they were Killed—Bear Crossing—Deer Stand—Wild Turkeys—How Caught—The Turkey Pen—Deer Hunting—Deer Licks—Small Game—Elk and Buffaloes—Wolf Pens—Panther Hunting—An Adventure by an Old Hunter—Narrow Escape—Peculiarities of the Panther, etc., etc..... 74

## CHAPTER VIII.

## FIRST COUNTY COURT, AND PUBLIC BUILDINGS.

First County Court, and County Officers—Clendennin's Fort the First Court House—Particulars of the First Jail—Where Located—How Built—Protests of Sheriff Alderson—Second Jail—Its Cost—Col. Ruffner's Description of It—First Court House—A Peculiar Quotation from the County Records—Building of Present Court Edifice—First Clerk's Office Its Location and Description A Copy from the County Records Present Public Buildings What the County Needs, etc..... 80

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE LEWIS FAMILY.

John Lewis Refugees to America—His Four Sons—Fort Lewis—War with the Indians—Heroism of Col. Charles Lewis—His Capture by the Indians—Leaps over a Precipice—Pursued by Indians—Narrow Escape from being Bitten by a Rattlesnake—His Sufferings Alone in the Forests—Attack upon Fort Lewis by the Indians—Bravery of its Inmates—The Eldest Son—His Defect of Vision, and Scholarly Attainments—General Andrew Lewis, the Hero of Point Pleasant—Invasion by the British—The Defense at Rockfish Gap—Patriotism of Mrs. Lewis—Eulogy by General Washington—Anecdote of John Lewis—Expedition of General Braddock—Timely Interference by Major Lewis—Washington's Opinion of General Lewis—He Recommends Him to Congress—Death of General Lewis—What Stuart said of Him—The Lewis Family in Kanawha..... 85

## CHAPTER X.

## ANCIENT CIVILIZATION.

Ancient Occupancy of Central America and Mexico—Early Settlement of the United States by a Prehistoric Race—Traditions of those Countries—Mythological Proofs cited—The Northmen Discover North America in the tenth Century—The Basques and Irish Fishermen—The Fu-Sang of Japanese History—Ancient Wall on Loup Creek Mountain—Its Peculiarities—Dr. Buxter's Recollections in regard to it—Mystery as to its Builders—Possibility of its being a Trap for Game—The Salt Spring on Loup Creek Island—Other Walls of a similar Kind—A Prehistoric City—Discovery of Ancient Relics—Sculptured Stones in the bed of the River—Ancient Fortifications—Mounds and Mound Builders 91

## CHAPTER XI.

## EARLY CUSTOMS, INCIDENTS, AND INVENTIONS.

Dress of Pioneers—Hunting Shirts, Short Gowns and Moccasins—Occupations of the First Settlers—Primitive Furniture—Of what it Consists and how Made—Table-ware, and Diet—House Warmings—Log Rollings—House Raisings—Corn Huskings—Quiltings—The Dance—"Black Bettle"—Scarcity of Professional Men—Pioneer Preachers—The "Doctors" and their Remedies—Lawyers and their Fees—School Teachers—Text Books for Scholars—Old-time Institutions—Hominy Blocks, Graters and Horse Mills—Home Tanneries and Shoe Shops—Mechanics—Snakes—Where Found and how Killed—Forts and Block-houses—When Occupied, etc., etc..... 100

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE HERMIT.

The Settlement near the Mouth of Elk River—Character of the Settlers—Description of the Scenery—The Two Sons, and the Daughter—Their Occupations—The Flight of Time—The Peace of that Eden Broken—The Young Man abandons his Home and Friends—Reason given—His Western Home and Hermit Life—Visits Chillicothe—Wild Appearance—The Dog—Cave Discovered—Piketon—Turnpike and Canal—Death of the Hermit—His Tomb, and Monument..... 110

## CHAPTER XIII.

## EARLY TRADITIONS.

John Young discovers Indian tracks near Jarrett's Ford—His alarm—Meets a party of Pursuers—Flight up Little Sandy Creek—Discovery of the Indians' Camp—Dawn of Day—Preparations for the Attack—Six Shots fired—Painted White Man Killed—Narrow Escape of John Griffith—His Narrative—Strange Creek—Interesting Circumstances Connected with its name—Massacre of Henry Morris' Daughters—The Flight to the Fort—Vow of Henry Morris—Narrow Escape of William Carroll—Massacre of the Wheeler Family—Murder of James Staten—Killing of Shadrach Harmon—Hale's Spring—Murder of Hale—Paint Creek—Bell Creek—Indian Creek—Flight of Fleming Cobbs—He pushes a Canoe from Point Pleasant to Charleston in Fourteen Hours—Pursued by Savages—Capture of Robert Hughes—Two years a Prisoner—His Escape—Incidents of his Captivity—Murder of William Wyatt—A Presentiment—Ann Bailey—Her Services as Spy and Messenger—Tacketts Pine—Miraculous Escape of Lewis Tackett, etc., etc. 116

## CHAPTER XIV.

## SIEGES OF POINT PLEASANT AND LEWISBURG.

Second Attack on Fort at Point Pleasant—Demand to Surrender—The Decline—Siege Lasts One Week—Failure of Indians, and their March Towards Donnally's Fort—Bravery of Fryor and Hammond—Their Arrival at Lewisburg—Preparation for the Defense—Murder of Fritchey—Bravery of Dick Pointer—Defense of the Fort—Stuart and Lewis March to their Relief—Narrow Escape from an Ambuscade—They Rush to the House through a Volley of Musketry—Deception of the Savages—Complete Routing of the Indians, etc., etc..... 134

## CHAPTER XV.

## EARLY HISTORY OF CHARLESTON.

Charleston in 1803—Its Streets and Buildings—Public Square, Court-House and Jail—Whipping-post, Pillory and Stocks—Their Uses—The "Thirty-nine" Lashes—Execution of two Negroes, Abram and Isaac—They are falsely Accused of Murder, and Suffer the Penalty, While the Real Culprits go Free—Description of the Gallows, and the Scene at the Execution—Bravery of Abram—He Pleads Innocence to the End—Accusations Against his Companion Peter—The Sheriff Removes the "Platform"—Last of Abram and Isaac—First Methodist Minister in the Kanawha Valley—Extent of his Circuit—Anecdote of Bishop Morris—Personal Incidents of Rev. Asa Shinn—First Methodist Class—"Billy" Morris—Anecdote of Him While a Member of the Virginia Legislature—Anecdote of Volney the French Infidel—Want of Persons Authorized to Celebrate the Rite of Matrimony—Amusing Weddings—Privations of Early Settlers—Kanawha Saline—Boring for Salt Water—Annual Elections—Kidnapping of Jack Neale—He Murders the Slave-dealer—His Arrest, Imprisonment, and Trial—His Sentence and Reprieve—His Subsequent Troubles—Rev. Dr. Ruffner—Personal Incidents, etc., etc... 144

## CHAPTER XVI.

## EARLY INCIDENTS.

Recollections of Colonel Joel Ruffner—Names of First Settlers—Buffalo Lick—Killing Game—An Engraved Stone—Manufacture of Salt by the Indians—Transportation of Salt—Keel Boating—River Traffic—Cider Royal—Table-ware of the Pioneers—The First Blacksmith—Scarcity of Luxuries—Sugar Making—The First Physician—How he was Regarded—Scarcity of Leather—Want of Shoes—The Pioneer Judge—Court Days—Hunting and Trapping—Captain John Bowyer—Bowyer's Ferry—Ann Bailey—One Trip as Mail Messenger—Observations by the Way—Teays's Valley—Hog Drovers, and the Corn Crop—Navigation of the Kanawha River—Tradition of a Silver Mine—George Harmon—Facts of his History—Abia Rece—Mrs. Hansford—Old Residences—The Champion Wood-Chopper—A Pre-historic Road—Items from County Records—General Washington's Lands, etc., etc., ..... 186

## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE MORRIS FAMILY.

The Morrisses the First Permanent Settlers of the Valley—Their Names—The White House—The Falls Property—Henry Morris, the Pugilist, etc., etc., ..... 202

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## RELIGIOUS HISTORY OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

Wonderful Advancement of Religious Institutions—Organization of the First Society—Asa Shinn, the First Preacher—Names of Pioneer Preachers—Bishop Bascom, the first to Preach in Charleston—Bishop Morris—Dr. Power—Wonderful Conversion of Charles R. Baldwin, the Great Lawyer, and Skeptic—His Labors as a Minister of the Gospel—Quarterly Meetings—Presbyterianism in the Valley—The First Regular Minister of that Denomination Stationed in Charleston—Rev. Dr. Brown—His Usefulness in the Valley—Rev. Dr. Ruffner—Isaac Noyes—William Rand and Son—Their Usefulness as Citizens etc., etc., ..... 205

## CHAPTER XIX.

## RESOURCES OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

Climate—Advantages it Possesses—Effects upon the People—Agricultural and Pastoral—Products, and Manufactories—Transportation—Navigation of Kanawha, Elk, and Coal Rivers—Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad—Four Reasons why it will Ultimately be the Greatest National Thoroughfare—Kanawha Coal Field—Eighty-Nine Feet of Coal Measures—Positively Inexhaustible—Quotations from Professor Daddow—Iron Deposits—Richness of the Ore—Where Found—Varieties and Qualities of Timber—Kanawha Salt Works—Early Salt Making—The "Great Lick"—How Wells were Originally Bored—Improvements Introduced—Coal as a Fuel—Morris's Invention—Its Utility—Gas Wells—Anecdote of a College Professor—Soda Ash—Superiority of Kanawha Salt—Names and Capacities of Kanawha Furnaces, etc., etc., ..... 211

## CHAPTER XX.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

Judge Lewis Summers—Born in Fairfax County, Virginia—Removes to Gallipolis, Ohio, in 1808—Comes to Kanawha in 1804—Elected to the House of Delegates—Elected Judge in 1809—His great services as a member of the Board of Public Works—His eminent services in Convention of 1829, etc.—Judge George W. Summers—His great powers as an orator—His success as a lawyer and politician—Is elected to the Lower House of Congress—His defeat for Governor—He raises his voice for the Union in 1861—Isaac Noyes, the humble and devoted Christian—His remarkable life, and his general usefulness—Strange circumstance of his conversion, etc.—Col. B. H. Smith, the able jurist—His long and laborious life in the Kanawha Valley—His character as a citizen and lawyer—Dr. Spicer Patrick—A brief sketch of his life—Hon. Greenbury Slack, the self-made legislator from Elk river—Brief Personal Sketches, etc., etc., ..... 250

## CHAPTER XXI.

## MISCELLANEOUS.

Newspapers which have been published in Charleston—Names and Publishers—Interesting Selections from County Records—Soldiers of 1812 who went out from Kanawha county—Modern Charleston—Location of the State Capital—Prominent Buildings—Mobbing of Dawson, Estep and Hines—County and City Officers—Formation of Charleston Gas Light Company—Other Towns in the County—Educational Advantages—Post Offices, etc., ..... 328

# HISTORY OF KANAWHA COUNTY.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### ORGANIZATION OF THE COUNTY.

*Original Boundary—Great Kanawha River—New River and its Peculiarities—Elk River, its Fall, Timber, Coal, etc.—Elk Valley—Gauley River, its Natural Fortifications, etc.—Coal River, its Cannel Coal, Forests and Farms—The Coal River Fort—Lewis Tackett—The Destruction of the Fort by the Indians—Miraculous Escape of John Young, with his wife and Child a few hours old—Jacob Young, "the Child of the Storm"—Pocatalico River and Valley—Kanawha's Present Rank as a County.*

Montgomery, Harrison, Monongalia, Ohio and Greenbrier were the original counties in the Western portion of Virginia. Kanawha county was formed from the territory of Greenbrier and Montgomery in 1789, and thus took her place as one of the pioneer counties in the Western portion of the "Old Dominion," the mother of Statesmen and of States. At that time it was probably one hundred and twenty miles long, by nearly one hundred in width, and was almost an unbroken wilderness. Its area was 2,090 square miles, its population numbered 9,334, and 1,453 citizens were of a proper age to bear the burden of taxation. Its western border was the Big Sandy river; its eastern, the line of Greenbrier county, (Sewell Mountain,) "a day's march" above the mouth of the Gauley; its northern, the vicinity of the Little Kanawha river, and its southern boundary was the counties of Montgomery and Tazewell, and the Kentucky line. It was a little State of itself, and contained more square miles of mineral area than any State in

•

the Union, excepting only, of course, West Virginia, of which it is now a component part.

It was watered by the following rivers, whose sizes rank in the order they are mentioned : Great Kanawha, New River, Elk, Gauley, Coal and Pocatalico.

#### THE GREAT KANAWHA RIVER

Is formed by the union of the New and Gauley rivers, two miles above the Falls of Kanawha, and flows through the county in a north-westerly direction the distance of ninety-five miles, and empties at Point Pleasant into the Ohio river, the original north-western boundary of the county.

With the exceptions of the Potomac and the James, the Great Kanawha is the largest river in Virginia. It is true that it is, as named, less than one hundred miles in length, but the New river, which is the Kanawha extended, takes its rise in North Carolina, and passes through Virginia to the Ohio, making a continuous stream of nearly 450 miles in length.

It is a remarkable river in the following respects: from its source to the mouth of the Greenbrier, its fall is gradual and quiet, not exceeding two and a half feet to the mile, and from the lower falls (Kanawha Falls) to its mouth its fall is even less than that ; but in the middle section, between the places named, a distance of about fifty miles, its fall is so great that it rushes in torrents over the rocks and through massive canyons, reminding one of the Yellowstone, Yosemite or the Colorado. The New river scenery, from the mouth of the Greenbrier river to the mouth of the Gauley river, is as grand, perhaps, as that of any other stream on the continent. The panoramas that it presents are overwhelming. It is awfully grand, and produces sublime emotions as you behold it. Talk of the Rhine or the Hudson, the Yellowstone or the Colorado—I doubt whether any of them can present a grander picture of the falling and rushing of the waters than is displayed by this stream in its passage down the slopes of the Alleghany mountains. The kaleidoscope creates new beauties every time you look into it ; the New river

•

is one of God's great kaleidoscopes that flashes grander and more changeable panoramas than any instrumental device of man.

In the Indian dialect "Kenhawa" signifies "River of the Woods." Our Kanawha, then, is the river of the woods, and it is quite appropriately named, as he who explores it must admit.

The Valley of the Kanawha, for the first sixty miles from its mouth, averages in width about seven-eighths of a mile. The land is rich and produces well, and was originally covered with large forests of the finest timber. The hills on both sides of the river, from the mouth of the Pocatalico river to the mouth of the Greenbrier, a distance of one hundred and seven miles, are literally filled with coal of almost every variety and kind. In the vicinity of Paint creek, twenty-three miles above Charleston, as much as sixty-three feet of coal shows itself above the bed of the river. I shall, however, speak of the coal area of Kanawha county under a proper head. I only advert to it here in order to show that the Kanawha Valley coal field extends beyond the present limits of the county whose history I am now writing.

#### THE ELK RIVER

Empties into the Kanawha at Charleston, the county seat of the county, sixty miles from the confluence of the latter with the Ohio. It takes its rise in the Yew Pine mountains of Randolph county, spurs of the Alleghanies, and flows through the original county of Kanawha for about eighty miles. It is said to be one of the most placid and beautiful of all the Virginia rivers. The fall per mile averages two and a half feet, but it is not equally distributed, being as much as four feet in the middle section, and less than two feet in the upper and lower sections. It is noted for its superior forests of timber, and its vast deposits of coal and iron. It is thought to be the great centre of the Western Virginia mineral territory. It derived its name from the numerous herds of wild elks that in days gone by roamed unmolested upon its banks. There are those now living who have joined in the chase of the elk in the Elk Valley, and who have feasted upon the delicious flesh of that noted animal

brought down by their own rifles within the limits of the grand old county of Kanawha.

#### GAULEY RIVER,

Which with New river forms the Great Kanawha, rises in the mountains of Randolph, slopes of the Alleghanies, and flows through, in all probability, the roughest and most mountainous portion of Western Virginia, (now West Virginia.) Like the other rivers mentioned, it is noted for its timber and coal; in the early history of the country it does not figure conspicuously, yet its steep mountains on either side would have furnished an impenetrable bulwark against the attacks of the Red Men, though their number might have been "legion."

#### COAL RIVER

Empties into the Kanawha on the south side, twelve miles below the mouth of the Elk. It was named by early settlers from the cropping out of the immense beds of coal along its banks, almost from its source to its mouth. It is not so large, nor so long as the Elk, nor does it drain so great a section of country as the Elk or Gauley rivers. It rises in the highlands of Raleigh and Wyoming counties of this State, and runs in a north-westerly direction a little more than 100 miles to its confluence with the Great Kanawha. Eighteen and three-fourth miles from its mouth it forks nearly equally, and yet the sources of the two branches are not very many miles apart. It has been locked and dammed as far as Peytona, thirty-seven miles from its mouth, and large quantities of cannel coal are annually shipped in barges down the river, and thence to Cincinnati, Louisville and other Western cities. After reaching the mouth of the river large quantities of this coal are also shipped to New York and other points East by way of the Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad. This valley will continue to be an important mining section so long as superior qualities of coal are in demand by States which have not a sufficient quantity to supply their wants within their own territory. The Coal River Valley is also a finely timbered section, and in some parts

of it there are a number of excellent farms, which are easily cultivated, and produce as well as the most noted agricultural portions of the State.

#### THE COAL RIVER FORT.

The first settler on Coal river was Lewis Tackett, who located on a tract of land lying near the mouth of the river. He was a hardy frontiersman, and passed through many an encounter with the Indians in the upper portion of the Kanawha Valley; and in all of them was adroit enough to "save his hair." He built a fort at the mouth of Coal river, which was the only block house, except a small one near the mouth of Elk river, between Col. Donnally's fort at Lewisburg, in Greenbrier county, and the one at Point Pleasant, which at that time was the extreme western frontier for white settlers. The Tackett fort was destroyed in 1788, by an organized raid on the settlements of the whites in the Valley of the Kanawha by the Indians from the wigwams on the Scioto, and Mr. Tackett's family were taken prisoners, he alone making his escape. A number of the descendants of Mr. Tackett still reside in this county in the vicinity of St. Albans, (Coalsmouth.)

In a Centennial paper recently contributed to the *Kanawha Chronicle* by Mary Patton Hudson, of Coalsmouth, I find a reference to the Tackett fort in the following language:

"About the year 1788, Lewis Tackett, his son-in-law, daughter and one or two other families were in the fort, erected on the very spot where stands the house in which I write, [about one-half mile below the mouth of the Coal river.] They were about to begin preparations for the evening meal, consisting of bread made of pounded corn, when the bellowing of their cow was heard, which they had tied several hundred yards from the fort, and upon repairing to the spot discovered that her calf had been killed by the Indians. Quickly returning to the fort they hurried a mother and child of a few hours old, into a canoe, across Kanawha river, the banks of which stream was not more than one hundred yards distant, intending to return for the others left in the fort, but they found before they reached the place the bastion had been destroyed, and the



inmates taken prisoners. Some of these were killed, but the children, aged respectively six and eight years, remained with the Indians for many years, when one of them returned to her home on Elk river, having been lost by a marauding band of Cherokees. It was impossible to understand her language, and she seemed to pine for the association of her barbaric friends."

Below we reproduce an account of the destruction of this fort, from a paper written by John Slack, Sr., Esq., of Charleston, about two years ago, and published in the *West Virginia Courier* in the Summer of 1875:

"John Young and his wife Keziah, who was a daughter of Lewis Tackett, were in the fort at the time; she on that day had been delivered of a son, (the first white child ever born in the Valley;) and, as the capture of the fort was inevitable, and the only way of escaping certain death at the hands of the savages was the not much less perilous alternative of flight, under the approaching darkness of night and amidst a heavy rain storm, the heroic husband and father, goaded to desperation by the surroundings, seized the bed, with mother and child, in his arms, broke through the darkness and storm for the river, and laying his precious charge in the bottom of the canoe, then almost half filled with water, pushed out in the stream. He had got scarcely well into the stream when he was discovered by the savages, who raised their hideous yell at seeing their much coveted prey about to slip through their fingers, as he had often done before. They fired a volley of bullets and arrows, which whistled harmlessly about him, but he soon got beyond their view in the darkness of the night; and ere he was out of sight he saw the fort in flames. Nearly or quite all the remainder of the inmates of the fort, on that dreadful night, perished at the hands of the savages, while the hero of this adventure pushed his canoe, with its precious human freight, twelve miles up the river to the fort where Charleston now stands, through that dark and stormy night; and, strange to tell, neither mother nor child received any injury from this perilous adventure and exposure. The mother lived to the age of nearly one hundred years, and over fifty years after the occurrence here narrated. This old couple left a numer-

ous offspring in the Kanawha Valley, which now counts in a direct line the fourth, and perhaps the fifth generation ; while Jacob Young, that 'child of the storm,' who is still living in Putnam county, West Virginia, within seven or eight miles of the spot where he was born, married a second wife within the last two or three years."\*

#### POCATALICO RIVER

Is the smallest of the five that passed through the territory of this county. It heads in Roane county, and flows south-west until it falls into the Great Kanawha at Raymond City, five miles below Coalsmouth, and seventeen miles west of Charleston. It is one of the most crooked rivers on the continent, winding its serpentine course through the hills, apparently striving to dodge the obstructions that nature has thrown in its way.

Its Valley is adapted to agricultural pursuits, is well stocked with timber and some portions of it are underlaid with coal and other minerals. It is a peculiar, though in many respects, a beautiful Valley, and is among the finest portions of the county. The name is a strange one, and in the Indian tongue means "plenty of fat doe."

I have thus briefly sketched the peculiarities of the rivers that flowed through Kanawha county when it was first organized, in 1789, the same year in which the Constitution of the United States was adopted. Of course, since then, the territory of the county has been gradually lessened by the formation of new counties, so that now but a very small portion of these rivers pass through Kanawha ; yet it is among the largest counties in the State in area, and is the second in wealth and population—Ohio being the first.

---

\* Mr. Young has since died.

## CHAPTER II.

## COUNTIES FORMED FROM KANAWHA.

West Augusta, the Parent of all the Counties of Western Virginia—Formation of Mason County in 1804, its Original Area, Population, etc.—Point Pleasant, Mason City, Clifton, West Columbia, Hartford City, New Haven, and their Manufactures—A Shawnee Indian Town—Cabell County, its Organization in 1809—Guyandotte, Barboursville and Huntington—Green Bottom—An Ancient City—Nicholas Founded in 1818—"The Glades"—An Ancient Lake—Logan Established in 1824—The Lewis Campaign—Tug River—A Peculiar kind of Food—Fayette Created in 1831—The Great Kanawha Falls—Hawk's Nest—Grand Scenery—Formation of Jackson in 1831—Ravenswood and Ripley—Braxton Organized in 1836, its Coal, Iron, Salt and Timber—Sutton and Bulltown—Boone Established in 1847—Its First Court of Justice, and Where Held—Juries Deliberate in the Bushes—Destruction of Court-house and Jail by Fire—Peytona—Incidents of Daniel Boone and Scraps from Early Records of Kanawha—Formation of Gilmer in 1843—Glenville—Putnam Established in 1848, its First Officers, etc.—Calhoun Created in 1855—Grantsville—Roane Founded in 1856, its Grazing Qualities, etc.—Spencer—Clay Organized in 1856—Occupation of its People—Formation of Lincoln, the youngest offspring of Kanawha, in 1867—Mud River—Hamlin—Present Area of Kanawha County, etc.

Kanawha county, as first laid out, was one of the largest of the original counties of Virginia. Its dimensions, boundaries, etc., have, however, been fully described in the preceding chapter. I shall now proceed to give a brief history of the different counties that have, from time to time, been "sliced off" of Kanawha, and close this chapter with the present area of the county. Before entering upon this undertaking, however, I desire to state that all the territory of Virginia lying West of the Alleghany mountains, was originally embraced in the county, or district, of West Augusta. The county of Orange included all that portion of Virginia east of the Blue Ridge, not embraced in Augusta. The county of Fincastle was next formed from the south-western territory; this, however, had but a brief existence as a geographical and civil division, and subsequent to 1734 the name of Montgomery was substituted for Fincastle. Greenbrier became a county in 1777, formed from West Augusta before the extreme western limits of that renowned old county became what is

now the State of Kentucky. Next were organized, from its western and north-western limits, the counties of Harrison, Monongalia, Ohio and Randolph; and, in 1789, "Kenhawa county" was formed from the territory of Greenbrier and Montgomery, as stated in the preceding chapter.

## MASON COUNTY

Was the first territory that was taken from Kanawha. It became evident that Kanawhaians could very well get along with a less number of square miles of land than they possessed, so a proposition was agreed to, allowing the Legislature to establish a new county from the north-western portion of Kanawha county, to be called the county of Mason, in honor of the distinguished Virginia statesman, Hon. George Mason. Accordingly, in 1804, an act was passed to that effect, and Mason took her place in the roll of Virginia counties, with her seat of government at Point Pleasant, situated on the plateau lying between the "La Belle" (Ohio) and the "Great Kenhawa" (Kanawha) rivers.

Mason county originally contained an area of 904 square miles, with a population, at the time of its organization, of 6,534 souls, 915 of whom were of the age requiring them to be enrolled for taxation. Its greatest length at the present time is about thirty miles, its breadth twenty-two miles; and it ranks in wealth and population fourth in the list of counties in the present State of West Virginia. The soil of this county bordering on the Ohio and Kanawha rivers, is of a superior quality for farming and grazing purposes; though back from the river it is somewhat broken, but is well-timbered, and many portions of it contain large quantities of a superior quality of coal and other minerals.

## POINT PLEASANT

Is the principal town in the county, and at this time has a population of from twelve to fifteen hundred. It is a historic point, being the site of the great battle between the Indians and the whites that terminated the border warfare on the part of the whites in invading the possessions of the "Red Men." I shall, however, speak at length upon this battle in a future chapter.

Along the Ohio river, in Mason county, are a number of manufacturing towns, which add much to the wealth and enterprise of the county. For a distance of perhaps five or six miles along the shore of the Ohio, opposite Pomeroy and Middleport, the tall chimneys of salt furnaces and rolling-mills blacken the air with volumes of coal smoke which constantly pour forth from their towering summits. The sound of the mechanic's hammer, the hum of the engine, and the whistle of the steamboat, all evidence the fact that there is life and vitality in that section of the State.

#### MASON CITY

Is the largest of the five towns that join each other and form a series of towns of five or six miles in length. Hartford City and New Haven lie immediately above Mason City, while below it, in the order in which they are mentioned, lie the towns of Clifton and West Columbia. The aggregate population of these places, were they thrown together, would make a city of full six thousand inhabitants.

#### SALT MAKING

Is the principal business which is carried on in all of them. In fact, I believe there is one or more furnaces in each of the towns named above, and a large quantity of salt is annually made there and shipped down the Ohio river, by barges or steamboats, to the Western markets, thus employing thousands of laborers and business men at reasonable wages. At Clifton is a large

#### NAIL FACTORY AND ROLLING MILL,

Which turns out several hundred kegs per day of the various kinds of nails. It is one of the largest establishments of the kind on the Ohio river, and has been a source of vast wealth to Mason county and its citizens. It is a forcible illustration of the already well understood fact in political economy, that manufactories of every class and kind are the life and hope of any country.

There was once, in the early history of this country, a Shawnee Indian town at the mouth of Old Town creek, which empties into the Ohio near where Point Pleasant now stands. It is supposed that it was deserted by them about the year 1760. While plowing in a field at that place, not many years ago, some eighty or more gun-barrels were found. An anvil, hammers, and other blacksmith's tools were also discovered. Several of the mounds in that vicinity have been excavated, and tomahawks, gun-barrels, pewter basins, and other old relics have been disinterred; proving, conclusively, that over a century and a quarter in the past, the Indians had a populous town on the banks of the "La Belle Riviere," and roamed unmolested in the pursuit of wild game, where now may be seen the most beautiful farms, under the highest state of cultivation, betokening the existence of another and a better race, and another and a higher civilization.

#### CABELL COUNTY

Was the second county which was formed entirely from Kanawha territory. It was created in 1809, and named for Governor Cabell, of Virginia. It contained 1,033 square miles of territory, and had a population of 5,884, among whom were 629 tax-payers. The Guyandotte river passes entirely across it in a north-westerly direction, and is said to be inlaid with coal along both of its shores, from its source to its mouth. It is also a finely timbered Valley, and parts of it may be classed as a good agricultural country. The lands of Cabell county back from the Ohio and Guyandotte Valleys are undulating, and are of but little value, except for their timber and coal.

#### GUYANDOTTE,

Situated on the Ohio, at the mouth of the Guyandotte river, has a population at this time of seven or eight hundred, and is the oldest town in the county. Barboursville, the county-seat, is seven miles from the Ohio river, and is smaller still than Guyandotte. Huntington, on the Ohio, four miles below Guyandotte, though less than four years old, is much the largest town in the county, and bids fair to take a front rank as a shipping

and trading point among the older and at present larger towns on the Ohio. It is the western terminus of the Chesapeake and Ohio railroad, and its population is between three and four thousand, being steadily on the increase. Huntington, no doubt, will be a city some day in the not distant future.

Cabell county was settled more than three quarters of a century ago. Thomas Hannan was perhaps its earliest settler, having moved from Boute-tourt county to Kanawha—now Cabell—in 1796, and located on what is generally known as Green Bottom, on the Ohio river, about eighteen miles above Guyandotte. Here the first permanent settlement in the county was made. Soon after, Thomas Buffington went down the river to the mouth of the "Guyan," and founded the town of Guyandotte.

Mr. Howe, in writing of this country, says: "A portion of the beautiful flat land of what is called Green Bottom, before the plow of civilization had disturbed the soil, presented one of those vestiges of a city which are met with in Central America, and occasionally in the Southern and Western forests of the United States. The traces of a regular, compact, and populous city with streets running parallel with the Ohio river, and crossing and intersecting each other at right angles, covering a space of nearly half a mile, as well as the superficial dimensions of many of the houses, are apparent and well defined. Axes and saws of an unique form—the former of iron, the latter of copper—as well as other implements of the mechanic arts, have been found. The remains betoken a state of comparative civilization, attained by no race of the Aborigines of this country now known to have existed. Who they were, and whence they sprung, tradition has lost in the long lapse of ages. It is a singular fact that these remains are rarely, if ever, found elsewhere than upon the river bottoms, or flat level lands."\*

#### NICHOLAS COUNTY

Is the third child of Kanawha. It was created in 1818, from the territory of Kanawha, Greenbrier and Randolph counties, and had a population

---

\* Howe's History of Virginia, p. 209.

of 3,338, with 373 "tithables," and an area of 143 square miles. It is watered by the Gauley and Elk rivers; its surface is generally broken, but in many localities it is rich and productive. In the upper part of the county, (now included in Webster,) is a flat section of country, about ten miles long and from two to three miles in width, called "The Glades," which was evidently at one time a lake. It is covered with brush so thick that a fox can scarcely pass through it, and is low and marshy; but when properly drained it produces well. Nicholas is a grazing county, and its citizens carry on an extensive business in raising, and trading in stock. It is also noted for its large beds of all kinds of coal, and its primeval forests of superior timber.

#### LOGAN COUNTY,

Named for the celebrated Mingo chief, was cut off of Kanawha, Giles, Tazewell and Cabell, in 1824. Its original area was 2,390 square miles; its population 3,680, of whom 245 were tax-payers. In 1840 its population was 4,309, and in 1870, 5,124. It is one of the largest and roughest counties in that portion of Virginia which is now embraced in the new State of West Virginia. The soil, though broken, produces well, and is well adapted to grazing. Its surface is literally covered with timber, and beneath it lie, undisturbed, inexhaustible beds of coal and iron.

#### THE LEWIS CAMPAIGN.

The destruction of the Roanoke settlement, in 1757, by a party of Shawnee Indians, gave rise to a campaign through Logan and adjoining counties, with the object in view of establishing a fort at the mouth of the Big Sandy river, to counteract the aggressions of the French and the Indians, who had constructed a strong stockade where Gallipolis now stands, then in Virginia. The command was composed of four full companies under the guidance of Colonel Andrew Lewis, of whom we shall have much to say in a future chapter. After they had arrived almost within sight of the Ohio river, a messenger reached them from Governor



Fauquier, with orders for them to return. The command very reluctantly obeyed the orders of the Governor ; and, on their return, being exhausted with hunger, fear of the Indians having prevented them from killing any game, and suffering from cold, when they reached the left-hand fork of the Big Sandy, they cut up a number of dried buffalo hides into small strings or tugs, and ate them, thus keeping themselves from dying of starvation. Hence they called the stream they were then on "Tug river," and to this day it retains that name. Several who detached themselves from their companies perished in the woods. The main body, under command of Colonel Lewis, reached home after much suffering ; the buffalo hides, the strings of their moccasins, their leather belts, and flaps of their shot-pouches, being all the "food" that they had for a number of days.

#### FAYETTE COUNTY

Was created in 1831, from Kanawha, Nicholas, Greenbrier and Logan. Its greatest length is perhaps forty miles, and its greatest width thirty miles. The New and Kanawha rivers run westward through its entire length. It is a mountainous county, but back from the rivers there is a considerable quantity of table land that is arable, and which reminds one very much of the rolling prairies of the far West. On the whole, it would maintain a fair rank as a stock-raising county. Its population in 1840 was 3,924, and in 1870, 6,647.

#### THE GREAT FALLS.

Two miles below the mouth of the Gauley river, and thirty-six miles above Charleston, are the Falls of Kanawha. At this point the width of the river is 500 yards, and the water rushes over a ledge of rocks twenty-two feet high, extending entirely across the stream. On either side, the mountains rise almost perpendicularly several hundred feet, and are apparently braced by ledge after ledge of *natural masonry*, which, with the rushing of the waters and the general wildness of the scenery, render this one of the most picturesque and romantic spots in the State. It is not, however, to be compared with Niagara, the Yosemite or Shaf-

faussen, but it is, nevertheless, a wonderful display of the power and endurance of Nature. There is power enough daily displayed at these Falls to run half the spindles in Massachusetts, and here is exhibited also the *endurance* of Divinity. From the creation, this great flood has been pouring over this cataract, and it will flow on forever, not in the least lessened or diminished by the lapse of time.

#### THE HAWK'S NEST.

More recently styled "Marshall's Pillar," in honor of Chief Justice Marshall, who, in 1812, was the first to measure the distance from its top crag to the river's edge, is situated on New river, seven miles above the mouth of the Gauley. It is a massive cliff of rugged stone, hanging over the river, according to Judge Marshall's measurement, 1,000 feet from summit to base; but a more exact calculation makes it only 740 feet. Standing upon the verge of this precipice, the river, in the distance below, seeming like a narrow creek, winds its way over rocks and between shores lined with apparent shrubbery and undergrowth; but when you approach it, the creek widens into a large river, and the shrubbery is changed to stalwart trees that have stood for centuries as witnesses to the flowing of the waters that lash their roots with maddening zeal. It is grand scenery, and conveys the idea of perfect solitude, where sorrow might forget her griefs, and folly learn lessons of reverence and wisdom.

#### THE LOVERS' LEAP.

A short distance above the Hawk's Nest is a large shelving rock which projects over a cliff, nearly five hundred feet in height, called the "Lovers' Leap." With this there is connected an interesting tradition, of which I present the following versions:

Soon after the first settlement of Greenbrier county, a young couple, whose names have been lost in the lapse of time, fled from Fort Union to find a home where they might consummate the height of their earthly hopes—a marital union—which had been denied them by the young girl's parents, who resided at the fort. Their steps were directed west-

ward, with the hope of finding another settlement, there to be duly united in wedlock according to the style and customs of frontier life. On arriving at this romantic spot, beholding the lofty precipice, and being deeply impressed with the scenery sublime, they stood entranced upon its summit. Whilst drinking in the grandeur of nature, standing upon the brink of the cliff, an overpowering dizziness siezed upon the lady ; she staggered forward, and before she could be rescued by the strong arm of her lover, fell over the cliff to the rocks beneath. The young hunter, driven to temporary insanity by the loss of her whom he loved dearer than his own life, leaped over the precipice, and like her was dashed to pieces upon the rocks below. The parents of this couple, knowing their attachment for each other, on learning that they had left the fort, organized a party to pursue them. They started upon their trail, which they managed to keep without difficulty until they arrived at the point from which the fatal leap was taken, and being likewise infatuated with the grandeur of the scene, halted upon its top crag and surveyed the valley beneath them. While thus engaged, the limb of a small cedar, which stood upon the margin of the cliff, was noticed to have been split off, and there came upon the party a misgiving that the objects of their search had fallen over the precipice. Search was at once made, and their forebodings proved to be real—there lay, side by side, in the embrace of death, the bruised and mangled forms of the young hunter and his betrothed. This strange romance gave to the place the name of "Lovers' Leap," which it will most likely retain forever.

If there be literal truth in any of the legends which have given the name to this place, I would prefer the following to the one already given, as being the more likely to have occurred ; although there are persons who cling to each of them as being literally true :

An Indian maiden had been commanded by her father—a chief—to marry a young chief belonging to a neighboring tribe. The wishes of the maiden, according to the Indian custom, had not been consulted, and she was frank in confessing to her father that she did not love the person whom he had chosen for her husband ; that she loved a young warrior, who was handsome, fearless, brave ; that she could never marry the chief,

Because her affections and her life were pledged to the youthful warrior. This confession, of course, only made the father the more determined in carrying out his desires ; so he sternly ordered the girl to obey him. She shrank from the impending calamity, and after a consultation with her betrothed, they decided upon flight from the wigwams of their kindred to find another home, where they could live as their hearts directed that they should live—for and with each other. On arriving at this picturesque spot, and finding that they were pursued, rather than be separated in life, they resolved to die together, and embracing each other they plunged over this precipice, and were dashed to pieces upon the rocks at its base. Hence, the legendary name—"Lovers' Leap."

"Go, count the sands that form the earth,  
The drops that make the mighty sea;  
Go, count the stars, of heavenly birth,  
And tell me what their numbers be,  
And thou shalt know Love's mystery.

"No measurement hath yet been found,  
No lines or numbers that can keep  
The sum of its eternal round,  
The plummet of its endless deep,  
Or heights to which its glories sweep.

"Yes, measure Love, when thou canst tell  
The lands where Seraphs have not trod,  
The heights of heaven, the depths of hell,  
And lay thy finite measuring rod  
On the infinitude of God!"

#### JACKSON COUNTY,

Named in honor of the seventh President of the United States, was formed in 1831 from Kanawha, Mason and Wood. Its length is about thirty-three miles, by twenty in breadth. It is, strictly speaking, a grazing county, though some parts of it are well adapted to agricultural pursuits. The Ohio river bounds it on the west, and Mill creek runs across it as its principal inland stream. Its population in 1840 was 3,779, and in 1870, 10,300.

## RAVENSWOOD

Is the principal town in Jackson county, and is situated on the Ohio river a short distance above the mouth of Mill creek, and about fifty miles above the mouth of the Great Kanawha river. Ripley is the seat of government of the county, and is a thriving little town on Mill creek, twelve miles from the Ohio river.

Jackson is noted, also, for its timber, and in some sections, for its minerals. In addition to large deposits of coal and iron, it is thought to contain mines of silver.

## BRAXTON COUNTY

Was cut off of Kanawha, Nicholas and Lewis in 1836, and derived its name from Carter Braxton, one of the signers of the Declaration of American Independence. It is between thirty and forty miles in length, by a mean width of twenty miles. It had a population, in 1840, of 2,575, and in 1870, 6,479—a very healthy increase. It is watered by the Elk and Little Kanawha rivers and their many tributaries. Like Jackson and other counties named, it is a grazing county. It is well timbered, and has inexhaustible beds of iron and coal beneath its surface.

## SUTTON.

The county-seat, named in honor of Felix Sutton, its first settler, is a thriving little town, situated on the banks of Elk river, exactly one hundred miles from its mouth. Bulltown, on the Little Kanawha river, is the next town in size and importance in the county. It was named for Captain Bull, who was the chief of a small tribe of Indians who were the first settlers of the town. Bulltown was a salt manufacturing point in the early history of the county. At this time a considerable quantity of salt is annually manufactured on Elk river at the mouth of Otter creek, three miles below Sutton.

At the proper time, I shall give the reader a full history of two important occurrences on Elk river that took place in the "old Colonial times."

## BOONE COUNTY

Lies south of Kanawha, and was organized in the Spring of 1847. Like all the counties in West Virginia south of the Great Kanawha river, it is mountainous and broken. It is valuable only as a mineral and timber country, and is by no means noted for its agricultural qualities or advantages.

The first court of justice that was ever held in Boone county, as I have been informed by James M. Laidley, Esq., one of the oldest practitioners at the Kanawha bar, met at the house of John Hill, then a Justice of Logan county, who lived about three-fourths of a mile below the present county-seat — Ballardsville — now owned by the heirs of H. H. Hopkins, deceased. There were four Magistrates present, who had invited Mr. Laidley to attend also, and assist at the organization of the county. He was elected the first Commonwealth's Attorney, having for his competitor the present Judge of that circuit, Hon. Evermont Ward. John Hill, the oldest Justice, was commissioned High Sheriff of the county.

Judge McComas held the first circuit court in Boone county, and appointed J. H. French, now of Mercer county, Prosecuting Attorney for that court. Until the court-house was built at the junction of the Pond and Spruce forks of Little Coal river, half a mile above the present court-house, court was held in the log church at the mouth of Turtle creek, a mile and a half below. Grand juries, when charged, and petit juries, when cases were submitted to them, retired to the paw-paw bushes surrounding the church, to deliberate.

Of the four Justices who organized the first county court, who were commissioned as such in the county of Kanawha, but two survive—Adam Coon and John A. Barker, of Big Coal river—both honest men and faithful public servants. Mr. Laidley, the first Commonwealth's Attorney, is still living, and promises many more years of active and useful labor.

The court-house and jail were burned by the Federal troops during the late civil war, and many of the county's most valuable records were destroyed.

## PEYTONA

Is the most important town in Boone county, and Coal river the principal stream. Coal river has been locked and dammed as far as Peytona, thirty-six miles from its mouth, to facilitate the shipment of the superior cannel coal which is mined upon its banks.

As would naturally be supposed, the county of Boone took its name from the greatest woodsman, perhaps, who ever shouldered a rifle—Colonel Daniel Boone, of Kentucky. Colonel Boone was once a citizen of Kanawha, and was her first Representative in the Legislature of Virginia. The County Records of 1789 show that he was appointed by the county court a Lieutenant Colonel of the militia. The following is a *verbatim* transcript of the record :

“ At a court continued and held for Kenhawa county, Virginia, October 6th, 1789. Present, Robert C. Clendennin, Francis Watkins, Charles McClung, Benjamin Strother, William Clendennin, David Robinson, George Alderson, Leonard Morris, and James VanBibber, Gentlemen Justices.”

Among other things the following order was passed :

“ Ordered, that George Clendennin be recommended to His Excellency, the Governor of Virginia, for County Lieutenant ; Thomas Lewis, Colonel ; *Daniel Boone, Lieutenant Colonel* ; William Clendennin, Major ; Leonard Cooper and John Morris, Captains ; James VanBibber and John Young, Lieutenants, and William Owens and Alexander Clendennin, Ensigns in the Militia of this county.”

And on April 4, 1791, the records of the same court contain the following :

“ A commission being presented in court from His Excellency, the Governor of the Commonwealth of Virginia, appointing Daniel Boone Lieutenant Colonel for Kenhawa, who came into court and qualified as the law directs.”

During the sitting of the first court, above referred to, October 6, 1789, the following order was made, which I deem worthy of mention here :

“ Ordered, that the clerk prepare a petition to be laid before the Gen-

eral Assembly of this Commonwealth, on behalf of this county, stating the disadvantages under which the inhabitants of this county labor from the remoteness of their situation, the thinness of neighborhoods, and the frequent incursions of the Indians, and praying to be exonerated from the payment of taxes until the blessing of peace is imparted to them, and they are enabled to derive those advantages from their industry which the fertility of their soil promises."

## GILMER COUNTY

Was *sliced* off of Kanawha, Braxton and Lewis, in 1843, and is a prosperous and flourishing county. Its seat of justice, Glenville, is a small town on the Little Kanawha river, the principal water course which passes through the county. It is somewhat of an agricultural county, but the citizens engage mostly in raising stock. Their outlet is through Lewis county to Clarksburg, on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, thence to Baltimore and the East.

## PUTNAM COUNTY

Lies on both sides of the Great Kanawha river, and was taken off of Kanawha, Mason, Cabell and Jackson counties by Legislative enactment; and in May, 1848, the county was duly organized. It is a county of considerable solid wealth in agriculture, minerals, and timber. Buffalo, on the Great Kanawha river, twenty-two miles from its mouth, is its principal town. Winfield, ten miles above Buffalo, is the county-seat, and, like the latter, is a prosperous and progressive village.

The following clipping from the Kanawha *Banner*, of May 28th, 1848, will be of especial interest in this connection:

"The new county, Putnam, was duly organized on Monday of last week. Ten Justices of the Peace were present. Quite a collection of the citizens were also present. The court was held at the house of Mr. T. P. Brown, on the left bank of the Kanawha, opposite Red House.

"The following officers of the county were elected: H. H. Forbes, Clerk; G. W. Summers, Attorney for the Commonwealth; Daniel B.



Washington, Commissioner of the Revenue ; S. T. Wyatt, County Surveyor. Matthew D. Brown was recommended to the Executive to be commissioned as High Sheriff, and Addison Wolfe, Coroner."

#### CALHOUN COUNTY

Is one of the offshoots of Kanawha, and was organized by Act of Legislature in 1855. It is quite small in area ; is rough and mountainous ; is covered with a large variety of superior timber, and is also well stocked with coal and other minerals. Grantsville, on the Little Kanawha river, which passes through it in a westerly direction, is the seat of government. The lumber interests engage the most of the business men of the county. The timber is floated out upon the bosom of the Little Kanawha river, and finds a market at Parkersburg, on the Ohio.

#### ROANE COUNTY

Was organized in 1856, principally from the territory of Kanawha county. A large portion of it is rolling table land, and not only produces well, but also presents a beautiful appearance. It is one of the best farming and grazing counties in the State. Some portions of it are well timbered, and underlaid with minerals. It is watered by Spring and Reedy creeks, tributaries of the Little Kanawha river, and by the main Right Hand Fork of the Pocatalico river. Its principal town, Spencer, is beautifully located on the banks of Spring creek, and is the seat of government of the county. Roane ranks well up to Greenbrier, Harrison and Monroe, as a stock-raising county. Its principal trading points are Charleston, in Kanawha, and Clarksburg, in Harrison county.

#### CLAY COUNTY

Was established in 1856. It is thought by many to be the roughest county in West Virginia. Elk river passes through it from East to West, and is the only outlet for the commodities of the county. There is

but little smooth or level land within its territory ; and as a natural consequence, there is not enough of hay, grain and the like, raised within the limits of the county to meet the actual wants of its citizens. The people of Clay county spend nearly all their time cutting saw-logs, getting out cooper stuff, hoop poles, &c., which are brought down the Elk river in very large quantities on nearly every rise. I have counted as many as one hundred and nine rafts, averaging one hundred logs each, as they came down Elk river, in one day, on a Spring rise. They were not all, however, from Clay, perhaps more than half of them being from Braxton and Webster counties. Like Braxton, Clay county is underlaid with immense beds of coal and iron, and whenever the locking and damming of Elk river is completed, the lands of Clay county will necessarily become immensely valuable.

#### LINCOLN COUNTY

Is the youngest of Kanawha's numerous offspring. It was organized in 1867, from the territory of Kanawha, Cabell, Logan and Boone counties. It is drained by the Coal and Mud rivers ; is broken and sparsely settled ; is a fair agricultural country ; is well timbered, and filled with coal and other minerals. Hamlin, its seat of justice, is on the Mud river, and is surrounded by a section of blue-grass lands that are considered very valuable, because of their superior grazing and stock-raising qualities. It is rapidly increasing its facilities for stock-raising, and promises to take a leading rank in this branch of industry.

#### PRESENT AREA OF KANAWHA.

The eastern limit of Kanawha at the present writing (1876) is Smithers creek, at Cannelton, twenty-eight miles above Charleston ; its western border is near the mouth of Scary creek, about fifteen miles below Charleston ; its northern extreme is the mouth of Allen's Fork of Pocatalico river, twenty-two miles from Charleston ; and its southern border is the Lincoln county line, perhaps fifteen miles from Charleston ; making its

greatest length forty-three miles, and its greatest width thirty-seven miles. By an air line, however, which is the proper method of measurement, it is thirty-five miles in length by thirty in breadth ; its population in 1870 numbered 22,350, and in 1876 will probably reach 25,000 souls.

I have thus very briefly given a mere outline history of the counties that surround us, which were once a part of Kanawha. It may appear to the reader to be foreign to the subject in hand ; but as my object is to write up the early history of Kanawha county, and as all these new counties which I have described were taken from Kanawha, I feel that it was necessary to give a brief sketch of each of them in the order of their formation, while describing the county as originally laid off.

## CHAPTER III.

## BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT.

**Formation of the Army—Lord Dunmore and General Lewis to form a junction at the Mouth of the Kanawha—Lewis' March from Fort Union—Captain Arbuckle as Guide—Lord Dunmore moves towards the Shawnee Towns on the Scioto—Two Soldiers fired upon by the Indians—The Beginning of the Battle—The 10th of October, the Great Field Day—Death of Colonel Charles Lewis and Colonel Fleming—Tactics of General Lewis—Plan of the Battle—Consternation and Defeat of the Indians—The Dead and Wounded—Cornstalk, the Great Chief, in Command of the Indians—VanBibber's Account of the Battle—The Centennial Celebration—A Monument to be Erected—The Old Fort.**

The battle of Point Pleasant, fought October 10, 1774, between the whites and Indians, during Dunmore's war, was the bloodiest of all the engagements fought on this continent prior to the Revolution.

The subjoined account of this action, from the work of Withers, is reproduced by Howe,\* from whom I copy:

The army destined for this expedition was composed of volunteers and militia, chiefly from the counties west of the Blue Ridge, and consisted of two divisions. The northern division, comprehending the troops collected in Frederick, Dunmore (now Shenandoah,) and the adjacent counties, was to be commanded by Lord Dunmore in person; and the southern, comprising the different companies raised in Botetourt, Augusta, and the adjoining counties east of the Blue Ridge, was to be led on by General Andrew Lewis. These two divisions, proceeding by different routes, were to form a junction at the mouth of the Big Kanawha, and from thence penetrate the country north-west of the Ohio river, as far as the season would admit of their going, and destroy all the Indian towns and villages which they could reach.

---

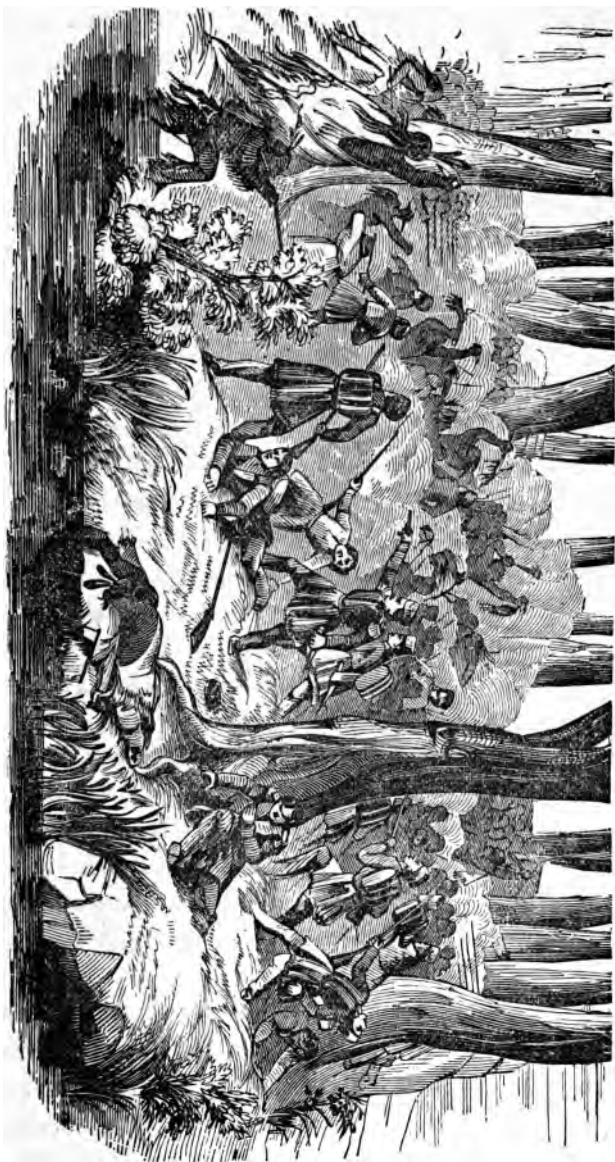
\* Howe's History of Virginia, page 361.

About the first of September, the troops placed under the command of General Lewis rendezvoused at Camp Union, (now Lewisburg,) and consisted of two regiments, commanded by Colonel William Fleming of Botetourt, and Colonel Charles Lewis of Augusta, containing about four hundred men each. At Camp Union they were joined by an independent volunteer company under Colonel John Field of Culpepper, a company from Bedford under Captain Buford, and two from the Holstein settlement, (now Washington county,) under Captains Evan Shelby and Harbert. These three latter companies were part of the force to be led on by Colonel Christian, who was likewise to join the two main divisions of the army at Point Pleasant, so soon as the other companies of his regiment could be assembled. The force under General Lewis, having been thus augmented to eleven hundred men, commenced its march for the mouth of Kanawha on the 11th of September, 1774.

From Camp Union to the point proposed for the junction of the northern and southern divisions of the army, a distance of one hundred and sixty miles, the intermediate country was a trackless forest, so rugged and mountainous as to render the progress of the army at once tedious and laborious. Under the guidance of Captain Matthew Arbuckle, they succeeded, however, in reaching the Ohio river, after a march of nineteen days; and fixed their encampment on the point of land immediately between that river and the Big Kanawha. The provisions and ammunition, transported on pack-horses, and the beeves in droves, arrived after.

When the southern division arrived at Point Pleasant, Governor Dunmore, with the forces under his command, had not reached there; and unable to account for his failure to form the preconcerted junction at that place, it was deemed advisable to await that event; as by so doing a better opportunity would be afforded to Colonel Christian of coming up with that portion of the army which was then with him. Meanwhile General Lewis, desiring to learn the cause of the delay of the northern division, dispatched runners by land in the direction of Fort Pitt, to obtain tidings of Lord Dunmore, to be communicated to him immediately. In their absence, however, advices were received from his lord-

BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT.





ship, that he had determined on proceeding across the country, directly to the Shawnee towns; and ordering General Lewis to cross the river, march forward, and form a junction with him near to them. These advices were received on the 9th of October, and preparations were immediately begun to be made for the transportation of the troops over the Ohio river.

Early on the morning of Monday, the tenth of that month, two soldiers left the camp, and proceeded up the Ohio river, in quest of deer. When they had progressed about two miles, they unexpectedly came in sight of a large number of Indians rising from their encampment, and who, discovering the two hunters, fired upon them and killed one; the other escaped unhurt, and running briskly to the camp, communicated the intelligence, "that he had seen a body of the enemy, covering four acres of ground, as closely as they could stand by the side of each other." The main part of the army was immediately ordered out under Colonels Charles Lewis and William Fleming; and having formed into two lines, they proceeded about four hundred yards, when they met the Indians, and the action commenced.

At the first onset, Colonel Charles Lewis having fallen, and Colonel Fleming being wounded, both lines gave way and were retreating briskly towards the camp, when they were met by a reinforcement under Colonel Field, and rallied. The engagement then became general, and was sustained with the most obstinate fury on both sides. The Indians perceiving the "tug of war" had come, and determined on affording the colonial army no chance of escape, if victory should declare for them, formed a line extending across the point, from the Ohio to the Kanawha, and protected in front by logs and fallen timber. In this situation they maintained the contest with unabated vigor, from sunrise till towards the close of evening; bravely and successfully resisting every charge which was made on them; and withstanding the impetuosity of every onset, with the most invincible firmness, until a fortunate movement on the part of the Virginia troops decided the day.

Some short distance above the entrance of the Kanawha river into the Ohio, there is a stream called Crooked creek, emptying into the former



of these, [see diagram,] from the north-east, whose banks are tolerably high, and were then covered with a thick and luxuriant growth of weeds.



PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT.

A, A small pond and ravine where the action commenced, and where Colonel Charles Lewis was mortally wounded. From this place, at right angles to the Ohio, to Crooked creek, both armies, early in the action, were extended through the woods. After a while the Indian line extended further down on the creek. B, the court-house. C, Cornstalk's grave. He was originally buried near the Kanawha; but subsequently his remains were disinterred, and removed to their present resting-place. D, position of the fort built after the battle. All the officers who fell in the battle were buried at or near this spot, in what was known as the Point Lot.

Seeing the impracticability of dislodging the Indians by the most vigorous attack, and sensible of the great danger which must arise to his army, if the contest were not decided before night, General Lewis detached the three companies which were commanded by Captains Isaac Shelby, George Matthews and John Stuart, with orders to proceed up the Kanawha river and Crooked creek, under cover of the banks and weeds, till they should pass some distance beyond the enemy; when they were to emerge from their covert, march downward towards the point, and attack the Indians in their rear.

The manœuvre thus planned by General Lewis, was promptly executed, and gave a decided victory to the Colonial army. The Indians finding themselves suddenly and unexpectedly encompassed between two armies, and not doubting but that in their rear was the looked-for reinforcement under Colonel Christian, soon gave way, and about sundown commenced a precipitate retreat across the Ohio, to their towns on the Scioto. The victory, indeed, was decisive, and many advantages were obtained by it; but they were not cheaply bought. The Virginia army

sustained in this engagement a loss of seventy-five killed, and one hundred and forty wounded—about one-fifth of the entire number of the troops.

Among the slain were Colonels Lewis and Field ; Captains Buford, Morrow, Wood, Cundiff, Wilson, and Robert McClanahan ; and Lieutenants Allen, Goldsby, and Dillon, with some other subalterns. The loss of the enemy could not be ascertained. On the morning after the action, Colonel Christian, who had arrived after the battle was ended, marched his men over the battle-ground and found twenty-one of the Indians lying dead ; and twelve others were afterwards discovered, where they had been attempted to be concealed under some old logs and brush.

From the great facility with which the Indians either carry off or conceal their dead, it is always difficult to ascertain the number of their slain ; and hence arises, in some measure, the disparity between their known loss and that sustained by their opponents in battle. Other reasons for this disparity are to be found in their peculiar mode of warfare, and in the fact that they rarely continue a contest, when it has to be maintained with the loss of their warriors. It would not be easy otherwise to account for the circumstance, that even when signally vanquished, the list of their slain does not, frequently, appear more than half as great as that of the victors. In this particular instance, many of the dead were certainly thrown into the river.

Nor could the number of the enemy engaged be ever ascertained. Their army is known to have been composed of warriors from the different nations north of the Ohio, and to have comprised the flower of the Shawnee, Delaware, Mingo, Wyandotte, and Cayuga tribes ; led on by men whose names were not unknown to fame, and at the head of whom was Cornstalk, sachem of the Shawnees, and king of the northern confederacy.

This distinguished chief and consummate warrior proved himself on that day to be justly entitled to the prominent station which he occupied. His plan of alternate retreat and attack was well conceived, and occasioned the principal loss sustained by the whites. If at any time his warriors were believed to waver, his voice could be heard above the din

of arms, exclaiming, in his native tongue: "Be strong! be strong!" and when one near him, by trepidation and reluctance to proceed to the charge, evinced a dastardly disposition, fearing the example might have a pernicious influence, with one blow of his tomahawk he severed his skull. It was, perhaps, a solitary instance in which terror predominated. Never did men exhibit a more conclusive evidence of bravery in making a charge, and fortitude in withstanding an onset, than did these undisciplined soldiers of the forest in the field at Point Pleasant. Such, too, was the good conduct of those who composed the army of Virginia on that occasion, and such the noble bravery of many, that high expectations were entertained of their future distinction. Nor were those expectations disappointed. In the various scenes through which they subsequently passed, the pledge of after eminence then given was fully redeemed, and the names of Shelby, Campbell, Matthews, Fleming, Moore, and others, their compatriots in arms on the memorable roll of October, 1774, have been inscribed in brilliant characters on the roll of fame.

Having buried the dead, and made every arrangement which their situation admitted, for the comfort of the wounded, intrenchments were thrown up, and the army commenced its march to form a junction with the northern division, under Lord Dunmore. Proceeding by the way of the Salt Licks, General Lewis pressed forward with astonishing rapidity, (considering that the march was through a trackless desert;) but before he had gone far, an express arrived from Dunmore with orders to return immediately to the mouth of the Big Kanawha. Suspecting the integrity of his lordship's motives, and urged by the advice of his officers generally, General Lewis refused to obey these orders, and continued to advance till he was met (at Kilkenny creek, and in sight of an Indian village, which its inhabitants had just fired and deserted) by the Governor, accompanied by White Eyes, who informed him that he was negotiating a treaty of peace, which would supersede the necessity of the further movement of the southern division, and repeating the order for its retreat.

The army under General Lewis had endured many privations and suffered many hardships. They had encountered a savage enemy in great

force, and purchased a victory with the blood of their friends. When arrived near the goal of their wishes, and with nothing to prevent the accomplishment of the object of the campaign, they received those orders with evident chagrin, and did not obey them without murmuring. Having, at his own request, been introduced severally to the officers of that division, complimenting them for their gallantry and good conduct in the late engagement, and assuring them of his high esteem, Lord Dunmore returned to his camp; and General Lewis commenced his retreat.

This battle—says Colonel Stuart, in his historical memoir—was, in fact, the beginning of the Revolutionary war, that obtained for our country the liberty and independence enjoyed by the United States—and a good presage of future success; for it is well known that the Indians were influenced by the British to commence the war to terrify and confound the people, before they commenced hostilities themselves the following year at Lexington. It was thought by British politicians, that to excite an “Indian war would prevent a combination of the Colonies for opposing parliamentary measures to tax the Americans.” The blood, therefore, spilt in this memorable battle, will long be remembered by the good people of Virginia and the United States with gratitude.

#### VAN BIBBER'S ACCOUNT OF THE BATTLE.

Mr. Howe also gives the following brief account of this battle, as being related to him by Mr. Jesse Van Bibber, an aged pioneer of this county, who lived upon Thirteen-Mile creek of Kanawha:

“During the action, those troops from the more eastern part of the State, unaccustomed to fighting with the Indians, were all the day engaged in making a breastwork at the junction of the Kanawha with the Ohio, so that the army, if defeated, should have a secure retreat. Ignorant of how the action would terminate, they worked as if for their lives, and before the day was finished had a strong fortification erected. When the alarm was given that the Indians were near, General Lewis deliberately lighted his pipe, and then coolly gave the orders to his brother,

Colonel Charles Lewis, to advance upon them. The soldiers in Colonel Fleming's regiment used a stratagem that proved very effectual. They concealed themselves behind trees, and then held out their hats, which the Indians mistakingly shot at. The hat being at once dropped, the Indian would run out from his covert to scalp his victim, and thus met a sure death from the tomahawk of his adversary. The whites in this action being all backwoodsmen, were more successful marksmen than the savages; a fact in part owing to the want of the mechanical skill in the Indians, requisite to keeping their rifles in order. At the close of the action, the Indians went off hallooing as if coming on to renew the attack. This stratagem deceived the whites, and enabled them to retreat in more safety. They recrossed the Ohio on rafts, three miles above, near the old Shawnee town."

#### CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION OF THE BATTLE.

On the 10th of October, 1874, a grand celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the battle of Point Pleasant took place; and although not now a part of the legitimate history of Kanawha county, I know that I will be excused for giving a brief account of it, and offering it in continuation of the history of the original battle:

The day was beautiful. The sun smiled upon the vast multitude, who had assembled to witness the anniversary celebration of the last battle on the frontier, and the first battle of the Revolution. Brass bands were present; among the number was the Cornstalk band of Point Pleasant. Sweet music rolled upon the air. Able orations were delivered. The people listened as though the words spoken were divine. The patriot sires who fell upon that field of blood one hundred years before, were appropriately extolled for their noble and manly virtues. It was a grand occasion, and an effort worthy of the noble citizens of Mason county. It will be remembered for many years in the future as having an intimate and inseparable connection with the battle itself—reviving old memories well nigh obscured by the dust of time.

A movement was then placed on foot to secure a fund sufficient to raise a monument over the graves of the heroes who fell in the battle of

"the Point." This was an appropriate movement, and every good citizen should be interested in its success.

Rev. W. E. Hill, of Point Pleasant, has been recently appointed by Governor John J. Jacob, of West Virginia, to solicit the co-operation of the Legislatures of Virginia, Ohio and Kentucky, in the erection of a suitable monument to commemorate the decisive battle of Point Pleasant; and he is now at work, and hopes to succeed in the accomplishment of his object.

The design of the monument indicates that it will, when completed, be an elegant structure. There will be engraved upon its walls the names of all the heroes who fell in the battle. There is also to be a slab in the basement *in memoriam* of the great and brave Indian Chieftain, Cornstalk, who was treacherously and brutally murdered a few years after the battle, and whose remains lie buried in the court-house yard at Point Pleasant.

#### FORT AT POINT PLEASANT.

A fort was erected at Point Pleasant just after the battle, at the mouth of the Kanawha. It was a rectangular stockade, about eighty yards long, with blockhouses at two of its corners. It was finally destroyed, and a smaller one erected about fifty rods further up the Ohio, on the site of the store of James Capehart. It was composed of a circle of cabins, in which the settlers lived. No vestige of it now remains.

## CHAPTER IV..

## EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

**The Frontiersmen, their Peculiarities and Dispositions—Backwoods Life and its Sequence—Early Settlement of the Great Kanawha Valley—The Era of Peace broken—Stroud the Pioneer—His Settlement on the Gauley River in 1773—The Massacre of his Family—Retaliation by the Whites—The Destruction of the Bulltown Indian Tribe—Kelly's Creek Settlement in 1774—"Tomahawk" and "Corn" titles to Land—Murder of Kelly by the Indians—Narrow Escape of Captain Field—Subsequent Murder of Kelly's Family—The Morris's, the first Permanent Settlers—Point Pleasant settled in 1774—Personal Incidents—Anecdotes of the VanBibbers—Eulen's Leap—Indian Incursions in 1791—Dunmore's Patent to Major Bullitt—The First Settlement at Charleston—The Clendenni Fort, the first house in Charleston—Other old Buildings—The Incorporation of "Charlestown" in 1794—Its first Trustees—Change of Name—The First Settlement on Elk River—O'Brien's Folly—Massacre of the Carpenters, etc., etc.**

The pioneers of civilization in Western Virginia were a peculiar people. They were fond of adventure, and lived on excitement as well as from eating wild game and Indian corn pone. Their attachment to the wild, unshackled scenes of wilderness life very soon banished from their minds any desires which at first they might have cherished for a home among the civilized and the friends they left behind them. They were easily weaned from old associations by the raptures of the new, and in short order became almost as wild as the animals upon whose flesh the daily subsisted.

The pioneers were not all hunters, yet that occupation employed large portion of their time during certain seasons of the year. The women, as well as the men, were skilled in the use of the rifle, the tomahawk, and the knife.

The early settlers very soon learned the customs and nature of the savages, and were not long in acquiring a sufficiency of skill and

adroitness to outgeneral the enemy on almost every occasion that they came in contact with them in the forest. Besides, they were ready in acquiring a knowledge of the woods, the different points of the compass, and the measurement of distances, so that, should necessity require it, they could make their way to any one of the settlements and apprise the inhabitants of impending danger. A very brief experience of woods life always disclosed to them the fact, that the more expert and successful they were as huntsmen, the more skillful and effective were they as warriors, and consequently they gave considerable time and attention to that accomplishment.

Then, they were an unit in their settlements, whether in or out of danger. Their objects and aims were one. Their hearts beat in unison upon every undertaking which they might desire to carry out. Similitude of situation and community of danger, operating as a magic charm, stifled in their birth those bickerings, which under other circumstances are so apt to disturb the harmony of society. Ambition for preferment and the pride of place, never disturbed the quiet of their settlements. Equality of condition buried with it the baneful distinctions created by wealth and envy, which under different circumstances would give additional virus to their venom. A sense of mutual dependence upon each other for common security linked them in amity. Together they lived, together they fought, together they died; and they were happier than if they had been surrounded by the gaudy trappings of wealth, the insignia of office or thirst for personal distinction.

Such were the pioneers of this country; and the greater part of mankind might now derive advantage from the contemplation of their humbler virtues, hospitable homes and spirits—proud and free; their self-respect and manly bearings toward each other; their days of health, and nights of sleep; their toils dignified by danger and adventure, and their lives guiltless and pure; their hopes of a cheerful old age and a quiet grave, with cross and garland over the green turf above them, and their great-grand-childrens' love for an honored and patriotic ancestry. True men—may their virtues be cherished by all who shall live after them, and their heroic deeds be held up as models till the end of time!



## EARLY SETTLEMENT OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

The settlement of the Kanawha Valley antedates the Declaration of American Independence. While the great heart of the American Continent was yet unmarked by the footprints of the white man, the axe of the pioneer and hunter had cleared away many of the majestic oaks that crowded the lowlands of the beautiful and fertile valley of the Kanawha and the smoke from the chimney of his cabin curled above his rural home. When the beautiful prairies of Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois echo only the shrill war-whoop of the savage in his aboriginal home, the Kanawha Valley was inhabited by a considerable number of Caucasian—the grandest race of men that God has placed upon the earth.

## THE ERA OF PEACE BROKEN.

From 1765 to 1774 there were comparatively few attacks made upon the white colonists by the Indians. The treaty of Paris, in 1763, resulting in general peace along the frontiers, had been pretty generally adhered to by all the savage tribes. The peace, however, which had for nine years blessed and fostered the frontier settlements, was suddenly broken by the murder of several friendly Indians, in 1774, on the Monongahela and Cheat rivers. This unfortunate aggression on the part of these white men gave rise to a general raid by the Indians upon all the settlements on the frontier. Had it not been for these uncalled-for attacks upon the Indians by rash and inconsiderate, not to say blood-seeking white men, our first settlers would, perhaps, have lived for many years unmolested in their rural homes, to breathe the pure air of this beautiful Valley then unclouded by the smoke of the furnace, the factory, the cabin, even the camp fire, except that of the Indians and their own. But it was decreed that peace should no longer hover over the Great Kanawha waters; and its pioneers were doomed to early, though not unhonored graves. The attacks by the savages, however, were not confined to any particular locality; they were general throughout all this border country and the brutal butcheries, which followed in quick succession, were

numerous and so appalling, that the blood of the civilized citizen is chilled at their recital, even though a hundred years have passed since the bloody deeds were done.

## STROUD, THE PIONEER.

In 1772 a German by the name of Stroud located on the Gauley river, then in this county, built a cabin, and made a clearing. The exact point at which he settled is not now known, but it is supposed to have been in that portion of the Gauley Valley which is now embraced in the county of Webster. That low, flat section of country in Webster county called "Stroud's Glades," no doubt, derived its name from him. These "Glades" are generally supposed, by those who have seen them, to have been a lake, of no mean proportions.

In the summer of 1772 Mr. Stroud left his home to go to Bulltown—now in Braxton county—to procure a supply of salt, then manufactured at that point by an almost extinct tribe of friendly Indians, whose chief was Captain Bull, from whom the town took its name. On his return, a few days afterward, he found his family all murdered, their bodies lying in the yard, their scalps having been taken off, and his cabin reduced to ashes. His cattle also had been either killed or driven away. Desolate and alone he made his way to the settlement on Hacker's creek, in Harrison county, but not until he had traced the trail of the despoilers of his family and home to the Bulltown neighborhood. His report gave rise to a suspicion that the Bulltown Indians were the perpetrators of these brutal deeds, and several of Stroud's friends resolved to avenge upon them the murder of Stroud's family.

"A party of five men, two of whom were William White and William Hacker, expressed a determination to proceed immediately to Bulltown. The remonstrance of the settlement generally, did not change their determination. They went; and on their return, circumstances justified the belief that the apprehensions of those who knew the temper and feelings of White and Hacker, had been well founded; and that there had been fighting between them and the Indians. And

although they denied having seen an Indian in their absence, it was the prevailing opinion that they had destroyed all the men, women, and children at Bulltown, and cast their bodies into the Little Kanawha river. Indeed, one of the party is said to have used expressions inadvertently confirmatory of this opinion; and then to have justified the deed, by saying that the clothes and other things known to have belonged to Stroud's family, were found in the possession of the Indians. The village was soon after visited, and found entirely desolate, and as nothing was ever afterwards heard of its inhabitants, there can be no doubt that the murder of Stroud's family was requited on them."\* Whether the Bulltown Indians were justly dealt with by Hacker and White, can never be known in this world.

So far as I can learn, from old records and traditions, Mr. Stroud was the first white settler in the original county of Kanawha. I am aware that it is generally understood that Mr. Walter Kelly was the pioneer settler of the county, but there is no question in my mind that Mr. Stroud preceded him by at least two years, though his settlement was further up the Valley.

#### KELLY'S CREEK SETTLEMENT.

In 1774 Walter Kelly and family settled on what is now called Kelly's creek, which empties into the Kanawha river twenty miles above Charleston. Here he established himself by taking a "tomahawk title"† to several hundred acres of land, built a log cabin and cleared the timber,

---

\* Chronicles of Border Warfare, page 106.

† A "tomahawk title" was a tacit agreement among hunters, trappers and settlers that by cutting upon a tree, near a spring or watering place, the number of acres of ground he desired to locate, giving the date and the name of the claimant, the tract was located, and no one ever disputed the right of such a party to the title of the land claimed. Another title to land, called the "corn title," was also quite common among the early settlers. For example: A settler desiring a "corn title" to an additional piece of land, goes to work, clears the same number of acres on his own land and plants it in corn, and thereupon receives a "corn title" to as many acres of the additional tract as he has thus planted in corn. I make these explanations at this time for the reason that it will be necessary to refer to these kinds of land titles quite frequently, before I close the history that I am writing.

undergrowth, &c., from a field for farming purposes. In fact, he permanently located at this point ; and his settlement was advertised accordingly. The nearest white settlement was in Greenbrier county, where a fort had been constructed for a protection against the attacks of marauding Indians, who infested the country on every hand. His westward advance had been made contrary to the wishes of his friends, and against the better judgment of the Greenbrier colony ; but Mr. Kelly, being of a venturesome nature and roving disposition, would not be controlled by the advice of his friends, and so, striking out towards the setting sun, he had made a camp for himself and family on the creek which took his name, in this county, fully eighty miles from Donnally's fort, in Greenbrier county, then the western limit of civilization.

Soon after Mr. Kelly located in the Kanawha Valley, it was ascertained that the Indians were preparing to make a general attack upon all the frontier white settlements of Virginia. Colonel Charles Lewis, who was in command at Williamsburg, sent Captain John Stuart westward, with instructions to apprise the whites along the Greenbrier river of the intention of the savages. He came as far as Lewisburg, and dispatched an express to the Kelly settlement, on the Great Kanawha. I quote from the "Chronicles of Border Warfare," the following paragraphs, which detail the sad fate of poor Walter Kelly, the second white settler in Kanawha county :

"When the express arrived at the cabin of Walter Kelly, twenty miles below the falls, Captain John Field, of Culpepper, (who had been in active service during the French war, and was then engaged in making surveys,) was there with a young Scotchman and a negro woman. Kelly, with great prudence, directly sent his family to Greenbrier, under the care of a younger brother. But Captain Field, considering the apprehension as groundless, determined on remaining with Kelly, who from prudential motives did not wish to subject himself to observation by mingling with others. Left with no persons but the Scotchman and negro, they were not long permitted to doubt the reality of those dangers of which they had been forewarned by Captain Stuart.

"Very soon after Kelly's family had left the cabin, and while yet

within hearing of it, a party of Indians approached, unperceived, near to Kelly and Field, who were engaged in drawing leather from a tan trough in the yard. The first intimation which Field had of their approach, was the discharge of several guns and the fall of Kelly. He then ran briskly towards the house to get possession of a gun, but recollecting that it was unloaded, he changed his course, and sprang into a corn-field, which screened him from the observation of the Indians; who, supposing that he had taken shelter in the cabin, rushed immediately into it. Here they found the Scotchman and the negro woman, the latter of whom they killed; and making a prisoner of the young man, returned and scalped Kelly.

“When Kelly’s family reached the Greenbrier settlement, they mentioned their fears for the fate of those whom they had left on the Kenhawa not doubting but that the guns which they heard soon after leaving the house, had been discharged at them by Indians. Captain Stuart, with promptitude which must ever command admiration, exerted himself effectually to raise a volunteer corps, and proceed to the scene of action with the view of ascertaining whether the Indians had been there; and if they had, and he could meet with them, to endeavor to punish them for the outrage, and thus prevent the repetition of similar deeds of violence.

“They had not, however, gone far before they were met by Captain Field, whose appearance of itself fully told the tale of woe. He had run upwards of eighty miles, naked except his shirt, and without food; his body nearly exhausted with fatigue, anxiety, and hunger, and his limbs grievously lacerated with briars and brush. Captain Stuart, fearing lest the success of the Indians might induce them to push immediately for the settlements, thought proper to return and prepare for the event.

“In a few weeks after this, another party of Indians came to the settlements on Muddy creek, and as if a certain fatality attended the Kelly’s, they alone fell victims to the incursion. As the daughter Walter Kelly was walking with her uncle (who had conducted the family from the Kenhawa) some distance from the house, which had been

converted into a temporary fort, and in which they lived, they were discovered and fired upon ; the latter was killed and scalped, and the former, being overtaken in her flight, was carried into captivity."\*

## THE MORRIS SETTLEMENT.

A few months after Walter Kelly located at Kelly's creek, came Major "Billy" Morris, his family, and three brothers, all of whom located at the same place. They were, therefore, the first permanent settlers in the county, (Kelly having been killed by the Indians.) The history of this family, if fully written, would make a large volume, and of course cannot be presented in this chapter. As I desire to devote an entire chapter to them hereafter, I will, for the present, pass them by with the simple observation that they are the most remarkable family that has yet been mentioned in our border history.

## SETTLEMENT AT POINT PLEASANT.

I have no means of arriving at the exact date when Point Pleasant was first settled ; but am led to believe, from the best information which I can obtain, that it was not prior to the year 1774—the year in which Kelly located at the mouth of Kelly's creek, eighty miles from the mouth of the Kanawha. I am quite sure that the fort at Point Pleasant was not erected previous to the campaign of 1774, and hence conclude that there was no permanent settlement of whites at that place prior to that year. The greater portion of Western Virginia, up to the close of the campaign of 1774, was infested with tribes of Indians who were continually on the war-path, and were constantly committing depredations upon the white settlements, from Wheeling to Lewisburg ; hence I conclude that it would have been impossible for the whites to maintain a position at the mouth of the Great Kanawha without a stockade ; and, inasmuch as

---

\* *Chronicles of Border Warfare*, pages 121-2.

there was none, the inference is that they had no settlement there before the date I have mentioned.

Another fact may be cited as proof of the position above taken, that all the territory of south-western Virginia was settled by pioneers from the eastern portion of the State, and not from the north-west. Greenbrier was first settled by Marlin and Sewell, in 1749, and Fort Union (Lewisburg) was constructed as the extreme western stockade. Next we hear of Stroud, on the Gauley, in 1772; next Walter Kelly, on the Great Kanawha, in 1774; and next the fort at Point Pleasant looms up, in the latter part of the same year, as the great break-water against the almost resistless incursions of the Indians who had been forced west of the Ohio river. The truth that

"Westward, the star of Empire takes its way,"

has been doubly verified in the peopling of the great stretch of country in Virginia by the Caucasian race, from the Alleghany mountains to the Ohio river.

#### PERSONAL INCIDENTS.

"There lives up Thirteen-mile creek Mr. Jesse Van Bibber,\* an aged pioneer in this county, whose life, like his own mountain stream, was rough and turbulent at its commencement; but as it nears its close, calm and peaceful, beautifully reflecting the Christian virtues. From conversation with him, we gathered many interesting anecdotes and incidents, illustrating the early history of this region, some of which here follow:

#### ANECDOTES OF THE VAN BIBBERS.

"A few years after the close of the Revolution, a daughter of Captain John Van Bibber, named Rhoda, aged 17, and Joseph Van Bibber, a young lad of 13, a brother of our informant, had crossed over in a canoe

---

\* Mr. Van Bibber died in 1859 or 1860.

one morning, to the west side of the Ohio, opposite Point Pleasant, on an errand to Rhoda's father, then living temporarily in a house on that side of the stream, when a party of Indians suddenly made their appearance. Dave, a black man belonging to Captain Van Bibber, gave the alarm, and rushed into the house. The Indians attacked the house, but were driven off by Dave and Captain Van Bibber, with the loss of two or three of their number. Joseph and Rhoda, in their terror, hastened to the canoe, whither the Indians pursued them, killed and scalped the young lady, and took Joseph a prisoner to Detroit. Rhoda's scalp the Indians divided into two, and sold them to the Indian traders at Detroit for \$30 each; their object in purchasing them was to encourage the savages in their incursions, so as to prevent a settlement of the country by the whites, and thus monopolize the Indian trade. Joseph afterwards stated that the barrel in which the scalps were put was nearly full of the horrid trophies. He remained with the Indians two years, during which time he learned their language, and acted as interpreter between them and the traders. He at length made his escape, and lived with a trader until after Wayne's victory, when he returned home. While at Detroit, he became acquainted with the notorious Simon Girty, then a British pensioner for services in the Revolution. He said Girty was an affable man, but extremely intemperate. Girty denied to him that he was the instigator of the death of Colonel Crawford; but that he went so far to save him that his own life was in danger.

"In the fall of 1788 or 1789, Matthias Van Bibber, aged 18, and Jacob, aged 12 years, were out a short distance from Point Pleasant, with a horse, when they were waylaid by four Indians. Jacob was leading the horse, and Matthias was a short distance ahead; with a rifle across his shoulder, when the Indians fired two guns at Matthias. One of the balls struck him over the eyes, and rendered him momentarily blind; he sprang to one side, and fell into a gully. The boy Jacob, on hearing the report of the guns, fled, and three of the Indians went in pursuit. Matthias, in the meantime, sprang up and took to a tree. The remaining Indian did the same. Matthias brought up his gun to an aim, the Indian dodged, and the former took the opportunity and escaped into



the fort. The Indians, after a tight chase of half a mile, caught the lad who, being very active, would have escaped had his moccasins not been too large. The Indians retreated across the Ohio with their prisoner. He was a sprightly little fellow, small of his age, and the Indians, pleased with him, treated him kindly. On the first night of their encampment they took him on their knees and sang to him. He turned away his head to conceal his tears. On arriving at their town, while running through the gauntlet between the children of the place, one Indian boy, much larger than himself, threw a bone, which struck him on the head. Enraged by the pain, Jacob drew back, and running with all his force, butted his head over, much to the amusement of the Indian warriors. He was adopted into an Indian family, where he was used with kindness. On one occasion his adopted father whipped him, though slightly, which affected his Indian mother and sister to tears. After remaining with the Indians about a year, he escaped, and for five days travelled through the wilderness to his home. When he had arrived at maturity, he was remarkable for his fleetness. None of the Indians who visited the Point could ever equal him in that respect.

#### EULEN'S LEAP.

"In the spring of 1788 or 1789, Ben Eulen, who was then insane, was out hunting in the woods below Point Pleasant, when he was discovered and pursued by an Indian. He threw away his rifle, an elegant silver-mounted piece, to arrest the attention of the Indian, and gain time. The Indian stopped to pick it up. Eulen unexpectedly came to a precipice, and fell head foremost through a buckeye tree, struck a branch which turned him over, and he came upon his feet. The fall was fifty-three feet perpendicular. He then leaped another precipice of twelve feet in height, and escaped.

#### INDIAN INCURSION.

"In May, 1791, a party of eighteen whites were attacked by about thirty Indians, about one mile north of the fort at Point Pleasant, near

the field now belonging to David Long. The whites were defeated. Michael See and Robert Sinclair were killed. Hampton and Thomas Northrop, and a black boy, belonging to See, were taken prisoners. This boy was a son of Dick Pointer, who acted so bravely a few years before at the attack on Donnally's fort, in Greenbrier. He became an Indian chief, and in the late war with Great Britain took part with the friendly Indians against the enemy."\*

## SETTLEMENT AT CHARLESTON.

In 1772, Lord Dunmore gave Major Thomas Bullitt a patent for a large tract of land on the Great Kanawha river, including the present site of Charleston, for his valuable services as an officer in Braddock's war. This survey began in the upper end of the bottom, about two miles above the mouth of Elk river, and extended down the Valley as far as the mouth of Tyler creek, four miles below Elk. Major Bullitt did not settle upon the land himself, nor did he ever even see it. In 1786 he met Mr. George Clendennin at Richmond, to whom he sold that portion of the tract on which the town of Charleston now stands. The deed was made to Mr. Clendennin in 1786 or 1787, before the formation of Kanawha county, and is on record in the Clerk's office of Greenbrier county, which then embraced this portion of Kanawha.

The exact year that Mr. George Clendennin moved upon the land which he purchased from Mr. Bullitt is a matter of uncertainty. It seems to be generally admitted, however, that he was the first settler within the limits of the present city of Charleston, and that it was either in the fall of 1786 or spring of 1787 that he built the fort on the river bank near Brooks' landing, which took his name. This could not have been later than 1787, for the reason that Lewis Tackett settled at the mouth of Coal river during that year, and the year following his home was destroyed by the Shawnee Indians, and those members of his family who were not taken prisoners, fled to the Clendennin fort at Charleston

---

\* Howe's History of Virginia, pages 320-2.

for protection and safety. I must, therefore, conclude that Charleston was first settled by George Clendennin and family in 1786 or 1787.

#### THE FIRST HOUSE IN CHARLESTON

Was built by Mr. George Clendennin, on the bank of the Kanawha river immediately in front of the present palatial residence of Charles Lewis, Esq., corner of Kanawha and Brooks streets, and was called the Clendennin fort, or "block-house." It was the only fort at that time between Fort Union, at Lewisburg, and the fort at Point Pleasant, except a small block-house at the mouth of Paint creek, twenty-three miles above Charleston. The Tackett fort at Coalsmouth was built the year following, as stated in a preceding chapter.

The Clendennin fort was a two-story double-log building, and was bullet- and arrow-proof. It was built out of large hewed logs, was about forty feet long by thirty feet in width, and stood for nearly a hundred years. It was torn down by Mr. Lewis, in 1874, to make room for the elegant brick mansion in which he now resides. Mr. H. S. Brace, a resident gun-smith, procured a cut from one of the large logs of the fort when it was demolished, out of which he made a handsome cane, which he kindly presented to the writer as a token of those days of frontier life.

#### OTHER OLD BUILDINGS.

Shortly after Mr. Clendennin built his block-house, several other log cabins were constructed about it; and they stood for many years, as monuments of the early settlement of the country. Including Clendennin's there were seven buildings erected in Charleston by the early pioneers. I have no means of knowing the precise order in which they were constructed. Old citizens claim, however, that they were all built about the same time, or at least within a few years after the erection of "Fort Clendennin."

Beginning at the lower end of town, I am informed there was a block of one-story log cabins on the corner of Kanawha and Truslow streets near the store of C. J. Botkin. These buildings were principally occupied

pied, after the beginning of the present century, by John and Levi Welch, as residences and places of business. John Welch was a hatter, and worked up large quantities of the various kinds of fur skins into hats of many colors and styles, in these old-time log buildings.

Coming up street, next in order, was the large two-story log mansion on the upper corner of Court and Kanawha streets, called "Buster's Tavern." It was kept by Thomas Buster, as a house of entertainment, for many years, and was one of the most noted stopping places between Richmond and the Ohio river.

Next was a neat, two-story double log building on Kanawha street, where now stands the drug store of Dr. James H. Rogers. In this building, in the early history of the county, Ellis Brown kept a hatter shop. John Hart, who kept the first ferry across Elk river, at its mouth, worked for Mr. Brown for many years at journey-work in his hattery establishment. Colonel Joel Ruffner and other old citizens of Kanawha say that they have sold Mr. Brown many a raccoon, fox, otter, and muskrat skin for the manufacture of fur hats.

Where Mr. Moses Frankenberger's three-story brick business block now stands, on the corner of Kanawha and Summers streets, there stood a two-story, hewed-log hotel, which is generally supposed to have been the original Charleston hotel, a man by the name of Griffin being one of its first proprietors.

On the same square, where the Kanawha Valley Bank building now stands, was a large log dwelling-house, put up by Nehemiah Woods, and occupied by him for many years as a residence.

Next above was a log building, two-stories high, where Dr. J. P. Hale's residence now stands, on the corner of Kanawha and Hale streets. It was one of the first buildings of the settlement in point of time. In this house, in the year 1808, Mr. Norris S. Whitteker was born, being the first white child born within the present corporate limits of Charleston.

Two squares above, on the same street, was a two-story log dwelling, which was built prior to 1790. It was torn down by Dr. Spicer Patrick a number of years ago, when he erected in its stead the brick building

now owned by the Kanawha Presbyterian Church, and in which Mr. H. H. Wood at present resides.

Shortly before the beginning of the present century, a small log fort was built on the river bank in front of the residence of Mr. Silas Ruffner, perhaps a mile and a half above the court house.

On the corner of Kanawha and Alderson streets, about the same year, was constructed a one-story log dwelling, which was subsequently remodeled, and long known as the Central House. This building was burned down in the great fire of December 12, 1874, and upon its ruins Lewis Wehrle erected the substantial brick block which bears his name.

There stood for many years in the vicinity of the jail, on Virginia street, a small one-story frame building with a steep clapboard roof, which was one of the primitive buildings of the town. It was occupied as a residence for many years by James Wilson, Esq., who was perhaps the first Commonwealth's Attorney for this county. After the death of Mr. Wilson, it was occupied by Captain Cartmill, one of the most influential and intelligent of Kanawha's earlier citizens.

#### INCORPORATING THE TOWN.

+ The Act of the Legislature of Virginia incorporating Charleston as a town, was passed December 19, 1794, and is in the language following taken from Henning's Statutes :

+ "That forty acres of land, the property of George Clendennin, at the mouth of Elk river, in the county of Kenhawa, as the same are already laid off into lots and streets, shall be established a town by the name of Charlestown. And Reuben Slaughter, Andrew Donnally, Sr., William Clendennin, John Morris, Sr., Leonard Morris, George Alderson, Abraham Baker, John Young and William Morris, gentlemen, are appointed  
X Trustees."

The name was originally "Charlestown," which was changed some years afterwards for reasons not now known. The name was suggested by George Clendennin, in honor of his brother Charles, who came to the Kanawha Valley with his elder brother in 1786, and became one of Charleston's most exemplary, distinguished and useful citizens.

## O'BRIEN'S FOLLY.

The upper portion of the Elk River Valley was first settled by Jeremiah Carpenter, his brother Benjamin, and a few other families from Bath county. The exact point on the river at which they located I cannot ascertain, but it was somewhere along that portion of the Valley which is now embraced within the limits of Braxton county. The settlement, however, worked up stream, instead of down, and the descendants of "Jerry" and "Ben" Carpenter at the present time constitute quite a community in the vicinity of the mouth of Holly river, in the county of Webster.

After the Carpenters and others had located on Elk river, Adam O'Brien, a raw son of Erin, found his way into the same locality, in the Spring of 1792; and being an inferior woodsman, and fearing that he could not find the way to and from the settlement, he incautiously blazed the trees in several directions from his home. Upon one of these marked traces a band of Indians one day chanced to fall, and pursuing it came to the cabin of O'Brien, which they found unoccupied; he, having become disgusted with the Elk river country, had gone back in the direction of Clarksburg.

After leaving O'Brien's cabin, the savages proceeded to the house of Benjamin Carpenter, whom they found alone, and killed. Mrs. Carpenter, being also discovered by them before she was aware of their presence, was tomahawked and scalped.

From a former narrative,\* I make the following extract in regard to the destruction of the Carpenter settlement on Elk river:

"The burning of Benjamin Carpenter's house led to the discovery of these outrages; and the remaining inhabitants of that neighborhood, remote from any fort or populous settlement to which they could fly for security, retired to the mountains and remained for several days concealed in a cave. They then caught their horses and moved their families to

---

\* Chronicles of Border Warfare, page 306.

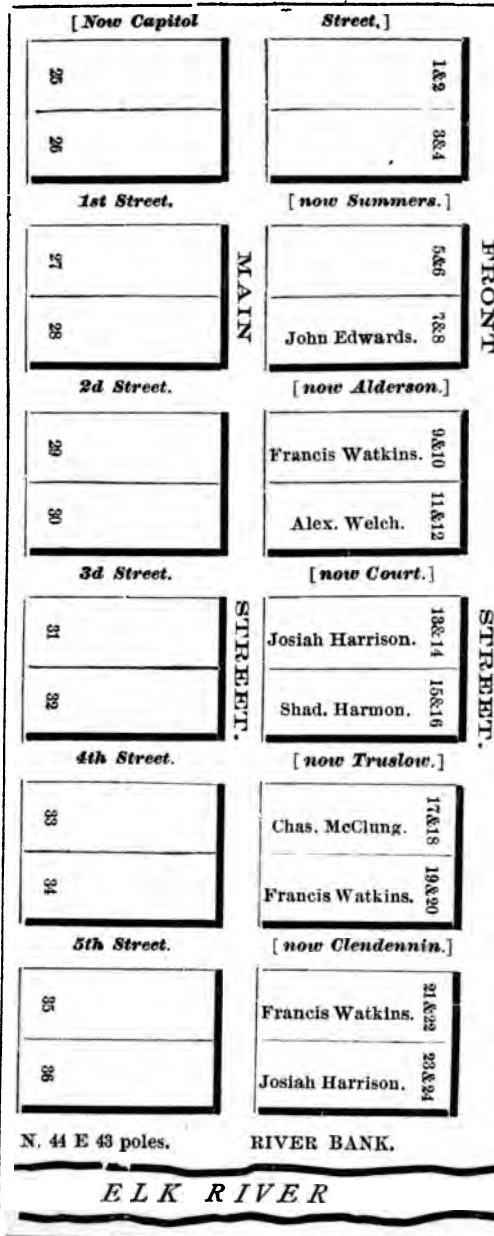
the West Fork; and when they visited the places of their former habitation for the purpose of collecting their stock and taking it off, their other property, scarce a vestige of them was to be seen — Indians had been there after they left, and burned the houses, pillaged their movable property, and destroyed the cattle and hogs."

The Carpenters and O'Briens afterwards moved back into the Valley, and from them are now being brought up the fourth and fifth generations of a direct progeny.

# GREAT KENHAWA RIVER.



S. 20 E. 106 poles.



"PLAN OF TOWN AT MOUTH OF ELK."

"Mr. John Dryden, Charleston, W. Va.:

"Dear Sir—The enclosed draft was certainly made off by Alexander Welch, the Surveyor of Greenbrier county at the time the town of Charleston was first laid out. The draft was found with the papers of Mr. Welch, which is in his own handwriting, and there can be no doubt about it.

NOTE.—There can be no doubt about this map being the original plan of the town of Charleston, which was laid off before Kanawha county had been formed from Greenbrier and Putnam counties, it being distinguished as the "Town at Mouth of Elk." I have made an exact copy of the plat as drawn by Mr. Welch, perhaps nearly one hundred years ago. It can now be seen by calling upon him at the Circuit Court Clerk's Office.

"LEWISBURG, WEST VIRGINIA, November 29, 1885.

Respectfully yours,  
SAMUEL S. THOMPSON."





## CHAPTER V.

## MURDER OF CORNSTALK.

Cornstalk and Redhawk visit Point Pleasant, and are detained as Hostages—Colonel Skillern marches toward the Ohio—Failure of General Hand to meet his engagement—Gilmore killed by bushwhacking Indians—Narrow Escape of Hamilton—Determination to kill the Indians in the Fort—Cornstalk's son, Elinipsico—His fearfulness, and the coolness of Cornstalk—The atrocious Murder of the Hostages—Incidents of Cornstalk—His premonition of Death—Superstitions of the Old Settlers of Point Pleasant—Cornstalk's unpretentious Grave.

The following account of this atrocious crime on the part of the whites, written by Colonel John Stuart, is taken from "Howe's History of Virginia:"\*

"In the year 1777, the Indians, being urged by British agents, became very troublesome to frontier settlements, manifesting much appearance of hostilities, when the Cornstalk warrior, with the Redhawk, paid a visit to the garrison at Point Pleasant. He made no secret of the disposition of the Indians; declaring that, on his own part, he was opposed to joining in the war on the side of the British, but that all the Nation, except himself and his own tribe, were determined to engage in it; and that, of course, he and his tribe would have to run with the stream (as he expressed it). On this, Captain Arbuckle thought proper to detain him, the Redhawk, and another fellow, as hostages, to prevent the Nation from joining the British.

"In the course of that Summer our Government had ordered an army to be raised, of volunteers, to serve under the command of General Hand, who was to have collected a number of troops at Fort Pitt, with them

---

\* See pages 364-6.

to descend the river to Point Pleasant, there to meet a reinforcement of volunteers expected to be raised in Augusta and Botetourt counties and then proceed to the Shawnee towns and chastise them so as to compel them to a neutrality. Hand did not succeed in the collection of troops at Fort Pitt; and but three or four companies were raised in Augusta and Botetourt, which were under the command of Colonel George Skillern, who ordered me to use my endeavors to raise all the volunteers I could get in Greenbrier, for that service. The people had begun to see the difficulties attendant on a state of war and long campaigns carried through wildernesses, and but a few were willing to engage in such service. But as the settlements which we covered, though less exposed to the depredations of the Indians, had showed their willingness to aid in the proposed plan to chastise the Indians, and had raised three companies, I was very desirous of doing all I could to promote the business and aid the service. I used the utmost endeavors, and proposed to the militia officers to volunteer ourselves, which would be an encouragement to others, and by such means to raise all the men who could be got. The chief of the officers in Greenbrier agreed to the proposal, and we cast lots who should command the company. The lot fell on Andrew Hamilton for Captain, and William Renic, Lieutenant. We collected in all, about forty, and joined Colonel Skillern's party, on their way to Point Pleasant.

"When we arrived, there was no account of General Hand or his army, and little or no provision made to support our troops, other than what we had taken with us down the Kanawha. We found, too, that the garrison was unable to spare us any supplies, having nearly exhausted, when we got there, what had been provided for themselves. But we concluded to wait there as long as we could for the arrival of General Hand, or some account from him. During the time of our stay, two young men, of the names of Hamilton and Gilmore, went over the Kanawha one day to hunt for deer; on their return to camp, some Indians had concealed themselves on the bank among the weeds, to view our encampment; and as Gilmore came along past them, they fired on him and killed him on the bank.

"Captain Arbuckle and myself were standing on the opposite bank when the gun was fired ; and while we were wondering who it could be shooting, contrary to orders, or what they were doing over the river, we saw Hamilton run down the bank, who called out that Gilmore was killed. Gilmore was one of the company of Captain John Hall, of that part of the country now Rockbridge county. The Captain was a relation of Gilmore's, whose family and friends were chiefly cut off by the Indians in the year 1763, when Greenbrier was cut off. Hall's men instantly jumped into a canoe and went to the relief of Hamilton, who was standing in momentary expectation of being put to death.

"They brought the corpse of Gilmore down the bank, covered with blood and scalped, and put him into the canoe. As they were crossing the river, I observed to Captain Arbuckle that the people would be for killing the hostages, as soon as the canoe would land. He supposed that they would not offer to commit so great a violence upon the innocent, who were in nowise accessory to the murder of Gilmore. But the canoe had scarcely touched the shore until the cry was raised, ' Let us kill the Indians in the fort ;' and every man, with his gun in his hand, came up the bank pale with rage. Captain Hall was at their head, and leader. Captain Arbuckle and I met them, and endeavored to dissuade them from so unjustifiable an action ; but they cocked their guns, threatened us with instant death if we did not desist, rushed by us into the fort, and put the Indians to death.

"On the preceding day, Cornstalk's son, Elinipsico, had come from the Nation to see his father, and to know if he was well, or alive. When he came to the river opposite the fort, he hallooed. His father was at that instant in the act of delineating a map of the country and the waters between the Shawnee towns and the Mississippi, at our request, with chalk upon the floor. He immediately recognized the voice of his son, got up, went out and answered him. The young fellow crossed over, and they embraced each other in the most tender and affectionate manner. The interpreter's wife, who had been a prisoner among the Indians, and had recently left them, on hearing the

uproar the next day, and hearing the men threatening that they would kill the Indians, for whom she retained much affection, ran to their cabin and informed them that the people were just coming to kill them; and that, because the Indians who killed Gilmore had come with Elinipsico the day before. He utterly denied it; declared that he knew nothing of them, and trembled exceedingly. His father encouraged him not to be afraid, for that the *Great Man above* had sent him there to be killed and die with him. As the men advanced to the door, Cornstalk rose up and met them; they fired upon him, and seven or eight bullets went through him. So fell the great Cornstalk warrior—whose name was bestowed upon him by the consent of the Nation, as their great strength and support. His son was shot dead as he sat upon a stool. The Redhawk made an attempt to go up the chimney, but was shot down. The other Indian was shamefully mangled, and I grieved to see him so long in the agonies of death.

“Cornstalk, from personal appearance and many brave acts, was undoubtedly a hero. Had he been spared to live, I believe he would have been friendly to the American cause; for nothing could induce him to make the visit to the garrison at the critical time he did, but to communicate to them the temper and disposition of the Indians, and their design of taking part with the British. On the day he was killed we held a council, at which he was present. His countenance was dejected; and he made a speech, all of which seemed to indicate an honest and manly disposition. He acknowledged that he expected that he and his party would have to run with the stream, for that the Indians on the lakes and northwardly, were joining the British. He said that when he returned to the Shawnee towns after the battle at the Point, he called a council of the Nation to consult what was to be done, and upbraided them for their folly in not suffering him to make peace on the evening before the battle. ‘What,’ said he, ‘will you do now? The Big Knife is coming on us, and we shall all be killed. Now you must fight, or we are undone.’ But no one made an answer. He said, ‘then let us kill all our women and children and go and fight to the death or we die.’ But none would answer. At length he rose and struck his

tomahawk in the post in the center of the town-house : 'I'll go,' said he, 'and make peace;' and then the warriors all grunted out, 'ough, ough, ough,' and runners were instantly dispatched to the Governor's army to solicit a peace, and the interposition of the Governor on their behalf.

"When he made his speech in council with us, he seemed to be impressed with an awful premonition of his approaching fate; for he repeatedly said, 'When I was a young man and went to war, I thought that might be the last time and I would return no more. Now I am here among you; you may kill me if you please; I can die but once; and it is all one to me, now or another time.' This declaration concluded every sentence of his speech. He was killed about one hour after our council."

Thus closed the life of perhaps the greatest Indian chief and warrior that ever lived in America. He feared death less than he feared the white man. He met his fate calmly, and died like a patriot. His murder was a disgrace to the men who committed the awful crime, and left a blot upon the history of our county which time nor change can ever erase. The Governor of Virginia offered a reward for the apprehension of the murderers, but without effect.

Point Pleasant, which was first settled in 1774, did not flourish for many years. It had no church, the state of society was bad, and it was for a long time the popular superstition among the old settlers that the place was cursed for this fiend-like act. This superstition, however, has passed away with the old citizens, who were contemporaneous with the great chief, and now, I am glad to say, Point Pleasant is on the road to prosperity. Its people of the present day honor the memory of these unfortunate Indians, though proud of the distinction which their tragical death has given the place.

The bones of Cornstalk lie buried in an unpretentious grave in the court-house yard at Point Pleasant; but, should the scheme to erect a monument to the memory of the heroes who fell in the great battle at that place succeed, as it is earnestly hoped that it will, the remains

of the great warrior will be exhumed and placed in the same grave with the whites who fell in the contest with him, and above their dust will stand a monument to tell posterity the manner and circumstances of their deaths.

"Where is my home, my forest home,  
The proud land of my sires?  
Where stands the wigwam of my pride,  
Where gleamed the council fires?  
Where are my kindred's hallowed graves,  
My friends so light and free?  
Gone, gone forever from my sight!  
Great Spirit, can it be!"

## CHAPTER VI.

## A PIONEER WEDDING.

The diversity of customs—Entreaty with the Parson—He consents—His reception at the Settlement—Appearance of the matron—Excitement among the poultry—A calamity within the household—Coon-skin bed—Narrow escape—Dress and appearance of the Bride—How the Bridegroom was “fixed up”—A strange objection—The “tying of the knot”—The Parson’s fee—The dance and jubilee, etc., etc.

Every nation has its customs, and every age has its peculiar whims of fashion, dress and style. The wealthy citizens of the great cities kill the “fatted calf,” wine flows freely, and they have grand balls, and bridal tours which, in many cases, “take in” all places of note and importance in both hemispheres; but the poorer classes, of course, can not indulge in such extravagance when their sons and daughters are united in holy wedlock. It is their custom, however, to have all the fun they can on such occasions, and they seldom fail to enjoy themselves hugely.

It is my purpose, in this chapter, to give a pen picture, as best I can, of a wedding on the Kanawha before Charleston was a city, and before you and I were born.

The parson lived fully eighty miles away. Mountains, creeks, and rivers intervened. The wind blew a gale, and the snow fell thick and fast. The messenger called at his cabin and informed him of his mission. The parson hesitated, but the messenger told him that he must not falter; that there was no other minister nearer than Hacker’s Lick; that the young couple were bent upon a marital union, and would, of course, listen to no excuse; that the entire settlement were preparing for the occasion, and the hearts of many would bleed if he disappointed them. The old parson, who had ridden thousands of miles, through rain and ice, to meet his appointments as an itinerant minister of the



Gospel, and had never failed, while in health, to be on time, after a lengthy consultation with his wife, at last consented to go. He saddled his horses, and in company with the guide, and his wife who always accompanied him upon such occasions, they started westward to the settlement on the Kanawha.

Passing over the adventures and the sufferings which were then consequent upon a ride of eighty miles through a trackless wilderness, find them at the settlement the evening before the day appointed for the marriage. The parson was the first minister who had ever left a foot-print in the sands of this frontier settlement, and there was no little excitement over his arrival. They rode up to the door of the parents of the young lady who was to be united in marriage, and the presence was announced by a number of little tow-haired urchins, from fifteen or twenty pounder in size up to a round hundred or more avoirdupois, in the following fearless and undismayed manner:

"Mother! mother! hyur's the circuit rider and his wife, and they nothin' but people like us, either. He's a big fat man like Uncle Bi and she's big too, and has got on a black straw hat with a turkey tail along the side on it! Oh, Kate, you ought to jist see his nose. I longer nor Uncle John's and as crooked as the gourd handle, and tuck down at the eend like pap's off ox's horn, that one what ain't bro off, you know!"

"Hush! children, hush!" shouted a womanly voice from the rear of the cabin, "keep quiet now and behave yourselves like good boys and girls. Billy, you take 'Watch' and hiss him on the black Spri rooster, but don't make much noise. Nance, you quit rockin' the ba and sweep the dirt off'n the ha'th. Jane, you quit churnin' and drive c that good-for-nothin' dog. Jim, shove that shoe bench under the b and wipe the water off'n them cheeks for the preacher and his woman set on, and don't fool about it neither. Be quick! handle yourself!"

By this time the matron had reached the front door, and opening confronted the parson and his wife.

"Come in," said she, "and make yourselves at home. We are very well fixed for keepin' company, but you are welcome to the b

we've got. Come in. Set up to the fire. 'Most froze, ain't you? I know you are. The old man, he's up the holler feedin' the hogs and waterin' the calves, but he'll be along presently, and will put up your horses. We've got plenty sich as it is, and you're welcome to it. Now make yourselves at home," and she left the room.

In a short time she returned, dressed in another gown, and, wiping the perspiration from her face with a tow-linen apron, continued:

"Well, parson, we've hearn of you afore, but its the fust time any of us ever seed you in these parts; and this is your woman? I'm reel glad to see her, too," and she gave her another shake of the hand. "We was afeerd she wouldn't come, as it was so fur and so cold and rough. You must excuse my looks, I hain't had no time to comb my head since yisterday mornin'. Work, you know, must be done fust, and fixin' up arterwards, 'specially when there's a weddin' on hands. Shoo, there! Sammy, drive them ducks out'n the kitchen. Sall, you take the woman's fixin's and hang 'em on the rack. Set right up to the fire and warm yourselves, and make yourselves feel as though you was jist right at home. We don't keer for style down hyur. We're plain home people." The old lady then subsided, and the parson and his good wife had a moment's rest.

By this time, the barking of the dog, and the yells of the boys, evinced the fact that there was a serious time among the chickens. The "black rooster" had been executed in short order, and his bulky carcass was thrown lifeless on the kitchen floor. Sally picked him up and dropped him into a large kettle of boiling water, and proceeded to remove his feathers instanter. The disturbance in the poultry yard gradually quieted down, until not even the musical quacking of an independent duck could be heard; and a few minutes later the old fat hound who had taken an innocent part in the chase, had fallen asleep in the corner, and was beginning to enjoy his systematic snoring, when the front door opened and two or three tow-headed boys entered, and, before they could close the door, a large cur pushed his shaggy form into the room and made a direct drive for the fire. The matron observing the presence of the intruder, reached for the poker and "went for him." "Watch"

howled piteously and struck a "bee line" for the kitchen, and as he had no time to work his rudder or measure distances, he ran into the churn, upsetting it; and bearing slightly to the north-east, he collided with the kettle of scalded rooster, and in like manner turned it in promiscuous order upon the puncheon floor. At this juncture the situation was somewhat serious in that pioneer household. The preacher had been an eye witness to the unfortunate occurrence, and that was what was the matter. If it had only been kept from his ministerial gaze no one would have cared. Well, it was no use to "cry over spilt milk," so the matron came promptly to the rescue.

"Get the wooden ladle, Nan, and dip up the milk, and don't scrape no dirt up neither. Keep the scrapin's for the pig. Be nice about it, daughter, because the preacher's hyur, and we read in the good book that 'cleanliness is next to Godliness,' and besides, you are to be spliced to-morrow. Kill that dog if he sticks his head inside this house ag'in. Keep the children out of mischief, and hurry on the supper, for I know that the parson and his woman are well nigh starved, as they hain't had nothin' to eat since they crossed Sewell mountain early this mornin'. Push things, Nancy, and show 'em you're the smartest gal in the settlement, 'kase I know you are."

"Oh, mother, please shut up. I'll do everything right, and more, too," said the unpretentious bride elect.

Well, supper came, and, although very hungry, the parson and his wife partook of that meal cautiously and thoughtfully. They had witnessed some things on that evening in the culinary department of that household which had a tendency to weaken the demands of the inner man; and yet nothing extraordinary at all had transpired. Customs vary in every locality. The parson, though an old itinerant minister, had not yet fully completed his education. He had not yet fully mastered the field of the itinerancy, or the simple fact of the upsetting of the churn would not in the least have troubled his appetite. Pioneers would call him fastidious, and they would not misapply the term. "A man in Rome should do as Romans do," but our parson and his wife had not quite attained to that degree of perfection in the study of human peculiar-

ities which would enable them to put this principle into practice. Had the demands of the inner man been less exacting, in all probability no supper would have been eaten by the parson and his wife that night. They ate, however, and ate heartily.

Night came, and the parson, being weary, after reading the scriptures, singing, and prayer, desired to retire. One of the boys lighted a pine-torch, and bidding the parties to follow, started for the second story of the cabin by means of a step-ladder in the chimney corner. The parson hesitated, but in response to cries of "come on," he went, followed by his wife. Saying nothing of a bruised forehead, which he received by colliding with a girder of the building, and a narrow escape from a fall to the room below, occasioned by the giving way of one of the boards in the floor, they succeeded in laying themselves down to rest in a raccoon-skin bed with straw underneath. Five of the family slept in the same room, and all of them snored as musically as the low, hoarse rattle that emanates from the throttle of a rusty steam-valve. The parson dreamed, slept, prayed, and listened, in about the order named, and how he longed for the dawn of day!

Morning came, and they arose. The wind was calm, and the sun smiled upon the grand hills which surrounded this pioneer home. Nature was rejoicing, and so were the family, for it was now but a few hours until the oldest daughter and sister was to be united in wedlock with a young man of the neighborhood, whose rifle never missed fire, and who had never lowered his arm in a contest with the savages.

The hour for the marriage had arrived. The crowd had assembled. The bride was attired in a flannel gown striped with red and blue, and around her shoulders was neatly thrown a white, blue, and red woolen scarf, knit from mountain-spun yarn. She was *elegantly* dressed, and was fresh as a morning-glory and white as a lily. She was the symbol of beauty and *elegance*. Her hair was fixed up *a la frontiere*, with rooster feathers through and through. She was a fresh-blown wild rose from the mountains of the Great Kanawha.

The bridegroom came at an early hour. He was dressed in buckskin pants, calf-skin vest, tanned with the hair on, and wore a blue jeans

hunting-shirt and beaded moccasins. He was a stalwart young man. His shoulders were broad, and his chest was full and rounded. He was fleet of foot, and when he pulled the trigger of his rifle something always *fell*.

The house was filled, a score or more stood outside the doors and windows, and all were anxiously waiting for the old parson "to tie the knot." The bridegroom took his position on the floor, and called to Nancy to come on. She was in the back shed of the cabin, and failed to respond to the call of her lover. He called again, and still she refused to come to time. The old gentleman, however, soon brought her to the front, and the parson began the ceremony; and when he reached the place where the question is asked, "if any person present can show any just cause why this couple should not be joined together, etc., let him now speak, or else hereafter forever hold his peace," there was a pause. The silence was profound.

"'Twas as the general pulse of life stood still."

But the silence was soon broken. A tall, good-looking young man over in the far corner of the room, in a very excited tone, exclaimed:

"I have an objection!"

The parson asked him to state his objection.

He replied: "Sir, I want her myself!"

The parson decided that his point was not well taken, and proceeded with the ceremony. After he had gone through it, and pronounced them man and wife, he ordered the young man to salute his bride, and her to salute her husband, which they did with an earnest embrace and a hearty kiss. Then followed the congratulations of the crowd, who approached the couple, one by one, shook hands with both of them, and, men and women, kissed the bride; after which, in like order, they withdrew from the building.

The parson, after a breakfast of bear meat, venison, corn-cake, and hominy, received for his services a promiscuous package of all kinds of fur skins, wrapped neatly around several pounds of tobacco, which was not only considered a luxury, but in those days was a legal tender also.

The old parson and his wife took their trophies and left for their home beyond the Sewells, and the party, led by the newly married couple, went to dancing, which they kept up, without intermission, for three days and nights.

The foregoing description of a frontier marriage will not apply, altogether, to every family of that day, but on the whole it is not overdrawn or exaggerated. Times and styles change as well as men, and a rehearsal of old history often appears quite ridiculous and unreasonable, yet such things have literally occurred. I was not present at the wedding described, nor was any one who is now living, but tradition has given us a well preserved record of how people were married a hundred years ago in this beautiful Valley, which was then seldom traversed by any other than a savage race, and it is my privilege and pleasure to put it in print and hand it down to posterity.

## CHAPTER VII.

## WILD GAME.

Adventures of Early Settlers—The Primeval Forests of the Valley—Beech Mast—Appearance of the Bottom on which Charleston now Stands—Herds of Bears—Their Tameness on Account of Fat—How they were Killed—Bear Crossing—Deer Stand—Wild Turkeys How Caught—The Turkey Pen—Deer Hunting—Deer Licks—Small Game—Elk and Buffaloes—Wolf Pens—Panther Hunting—An Adventure by an Old Hunter—Narrow Escape—Peculiarities of the Panther, etc., etc.

The Morrisises, the Clendennins, the Tacketts, the Aarons and the Youngs, were the first permanent settlers of Kanawha county. From their descendants I have learned much of the early history of the Kanawha Valley. Of course their knowledge was derived in a traditionary way from their ancestors. Their traditions have been compared with each other so often that the history thus preserved may be relied upon as measurably correct. It is remarkably interesting to hear them rehearse the adventures of their fathers with the Indians, and the narrow escapes they had in their encounters with panthers, wolves, wild-cats, and bears. In this chapter it is my purpose to dwell upon the various kinds of wild animals and game which abounded in the original county of Kanawha and narrate one or two encounters with panthers and wolves, as related by an old citizen long since gone from the sublunary cares of earth.

The Kanawha Valley was at one time literally covered and packed with the largest growths of nearly every variety of timber common to this latitude. Beech may be especially mentioned, which grew in great abundance in the low, flat portions of the entire Valley. The heavy beech masts never failed to attract wild-turkeys, pigeons, and bears, in numberless flocks and companies, every Fall.

The wide, level bottom on which Charleston now stands, was studded

formerly with beech timber, and the pioneer hunters would come here every fall, from all the neighboring settlements, to kill their winter's bear meat. The bears would get so fat and lazy from eating the beech mast, that they would hardly move out of the way of the hunter. I am informed that the hunter would walk in among the hundreds of bears, which would be busily occupied, with their noses concealed in the leaves, rooting for mast, and that, after selecting only the fattest, he would place the muzzle of his rifle almost against his victim's heart, and shoot him dead, without even momentarily disturbing the scores of others still rooting around them. Hundreds of bears were killed here in this manner every fall, and salted down by the pioneers, for winter use. Benjamin Morris killed thirteen during one afternoon's hunt in the Kanawha bottom a few miles above Charleston, and it was not considered, by any means, extra hunting, though he was one of the best hunters of his day.

There was a "bear crossing" in front of the court-house, where they were accustomed to swim the Kanawha in their migrations northward every spring. Like deer, they had particular places at which to cross the rivers; and on either side of the Kanawha, I am informed, were paths deeply worn by these animals in their approach to, and exit from, the river. The deer crossing, or "stand," as it is usually called, was in front of Clendennin's fort, where Mr. C. C. Lewis's residence now stands.

Next to bears, wild-turkeys were prized the highest by the pioneer settlers. They were hunted especially to secure their breasts, which were eaten with bear's meat in place of bread. No other portion of the turkey was eaten as food. I am credibly informed that wild-turkeys were so numerous in this vicinity about the beginning of the present century, that some one had to be kept on guard daily during the fall, to prevent them from destroying the crops of the settlers.

Turkeys were killed in various ways. The most common method, of course, was to bring them down with the rifle; one shot frequently killed as many as four or five. But this method was considered so tedious, that "trapping" for them was more generally used. The traps, or "pens," as they were called by the pioneers, were constructed after the



following manner: Poles were cut, perhaps fifteen or twenty feet long, out of which a square pen was constructed, about ten feet high and covered with brush. A ditch was then dug some three feet deep and two feet wide, beginning some ten or fifteen feet from the pen and running under the side of, and sloping up into the pen. A board was then laid over the ditch inside the pen, leaving only a small hole for the turkeys to come up through, and shelled corn scattered in the trench as a bait. A drove of them would happen along, and discovering the corn, would follow the ditch until they found themselves inside the pen. After they once got inside they were there to stay, for they could never find the trench again. As many as fifty wild turkeys have been caught at a time in one of these traps.

Next in the order of value, among the early settlers, was the deer. They were found in every portion of the county, abounding in numbers and varieties. They were hunted, in the olden times, by watching salt springs, called "deer licks," at night. A platform, fifteen or twenty feet high, was constructed, and on it a bright fire was kept burning during the night, which would attract the attention of the deer coming into the vicinity of the "lick," and blind them so completely that they could be shot down without difficulty. The manner of killing them now-a-days is by means of the chase, which was also practiced quite frequently by the early settlers. A party would take their rifles and several hounds, and, going far away from any of the settlements, would very soon start a deer. Others, having been stationed at gaps in the mountains or at river crossings called "stands," awaited the coming of their prey. After making a circuit of several miles, pursued by the dogs, the deer would never fail to pass by the regular stands and would be picked off by the sharpshooters who had been left on guard there. The flesh of the deer was usually cut into strings, dried over a fire, and laid away for winter use. This dried venison was called "jerky" and has always been considered a delicacy.

Squirrels, rabbits, musk shrews, and other small game, have always been plentiful in the Kanawha Valley from its first settlement to the present day. The early settlers, however, scarcely ever killed anything:

small and insignificant as these kinds of game. They would pass by all smaller game, when they were out for the purpose of hunting the larger, such as the deer, elk, bear, and turkey.

Elk and buffaloes also abounded in the Kanawha and Elk Valleys. The last buffalo seen here was killed on Little Coal river, in what is now Boone county, about half a century ago, and the last elk was killed by James Jopling, on the waters of Indian creek of Elk river, about the same time.

Wolves and panthers were most to be dreaded of all the wild animals that infested this section of country. There are those now living in Charleston who have heard wolves howling in the suburbs of the town during the darkness of the night, in search of something to satisfy their hunger. They were caught in pens and traps constructed by the settlers; not so much for the value of their fur or skins as to prevent them from killing sheep, cattle, and hogs. A wolf pen was constructed by digging a square hole in the ground about fifteen feet deep, and covering it over with brush and leaves. Some kind of bait was then placed upon the leaves, and a dozen or more hungry wolves would rush upon the covering of the pen to secure the bait, when the brush would give way and the wolves would fall into the pit, from which they could not escape.

Of all the wild beasts which inhabited our forests, none were more to be feared by the hunters than the panther. Its stealthy, cat-like tread, scarcely making a rustle among the dry leaves, its frightful spring, and the certainty of its fastening the victim in its long knife-like claws, made it the terror of our forests, like the lion in the forests of Africa and South America. They have not the strength of the bear, nor the tenacity of the wolf, but what they lack in strength they make up in activity and terrific fierceness of attack. The scream of the panther always produces a chill upon the feelings of the bravest woodsman. They attack all kinds of beasts, and are so sly and quick that it is difficult to evade them.

The following story was told, a few years since, by an aged citizen of this county, and I have every reason to believe it to be true to the letter:

"I was living on a branch of Pocatalico river, called Panther run—so

called from the circumstance which I am about to narrate. I had left home for a deer hunt, with rifle, tomahawk and butcher-knife in my belt, as was customary; and, scouring about the woods, I came into a thick piece of brush—in fact, a perfect thicket of hoop-poles. I discovered by the sound that some dreadful scuffling was going on, apparently within a distance of a hundred yards or so. I crept as cautiously and silently as possible through the thicket, and kept on until I found myself within perhaps twenty steps of two very large male panthers, which were making a desperate fight, screaming, spitting, and yelling like a couple of mad cats, only much louder, as you may guess. At last, one of them seemed to have absolutely killed the other, for he lay quite motionless. This was what I had been waiting for; and while the former was swinging backward and forward over the latter in triumph, I blazed away; but owing to his singular motion, I shot him through the bulge of the ribs, a little too far back to kill him instantly. They are a very hard animal to kill. He now made one prodigious bound through the brush, and cleared himself out of sight, the ground where we were, being quite broken as well as slanting. I then walked up to the other, mistrusting nothing, and was within a yard of him, when he made one spring to his feet, and fastened on my left shoulder with his teeth and claws, where he inflicted several deep wounds. I was uncommonly active, as well as stout, in those days, and feared neither man nor beast in a scuffle; but I had hard work to keep my feet under the weight of such an attack. I had my knife out in an instant, and put it into him as fast as possible for dear life. So we tusseled away, and the ground being slanting and steep, which increased my trouble to keep from falling, we gradually worked down hill till I was forced against a large log, and we both came to the ground, the panther inside and I outside; he still keeping hold, though evidently weakening under the repeated digs and rips I had given him with my knife. I kept on knifing away until I found his hold slacking, and he let go at last, to my great rejoicing. I got to my feet, made for my rifle, which I had dropped early in the scuffle, got it, and ran home. I had then received as many claws from a panther as I could well stand, and wanted no more, at least on that day. I gath-

ered the neighbors, with their dogs, and on returning found the panthers not more than fifteen rods apart; the one I had knifed was dying, and the one I had shot was making an effort to climb a tree to the height of ten or fifteen feet, when he fell and was speedily dispatched. Next day I stripped them of their skins, which I sold to a fur dealer for two dollars each. You may depend that I never got into another fight with a panther after that; and I warn every one never to attack one of these tricky and fierce beasts of the forest."

## CHAPTER VIII.

## FIRST COUNTY COURT, AND PUBLIC BUILDINGS.

First County Court, and County Officers—Clendennin's Fort the First Court House—Particulars of the First Jail—Where Located—How Built—Protests of Sheriff Alderson—Second Jail—Its Cost—Col. Ruffner's Description of It—First Court House—A Peculiar Quotation from the County Records—Building of Present Court Edifice—First Clerk's Office—Its Location and Description—A Copy from the County Records—Present Public Buildings—What the County Needs, etc.

On the 5th of October, A. D. 1789, the first County Court for the then new county of Kanawha was held. The following "gentlemen justices" were severally sworn and qualified as members of said Court: Thomas Lewis, Rob't Clendennin, Francis Watkins, Charles McClung, Benjamin Strother, William Clendennin, David Robinson, George Alderson, Leonard Morris, and James Van Bibber.

Thomas Lewis, being the oldest member of the Court, was, by the laws of Virginia, entitled to the Sherifalty of the county, and was accordingly commissioned as such by the Governor of the Commonwealth, and took the oath required by law. Mr. Lewis thereupon appointed John Lewis his deputy.

William H. Cavendish was appointed Clerk of the Court, and was introduced and took the oath of office.

Reuben Slaughter was appointed County Surveyor, and Benjamin Strother, David Robinson, and John Van Bibber were appointed Commissioners of Revenue for the county.

At the first sitting of the Court the following order was passed: "Ordered, that the public buildings for the use of this county be erected on the lands of George Clendennin, at the mouth of Elk river, or as near thereto as the situation will admit, and until the erection of said buildings Court be held at the mansion house of George Clendennin."

## A COUNTY PRISON.

The Court held February 6, 1792, passed the following order in relation to the construction of a county jail: "Ordered, that the Clerk of this county do advertise letting the building of a prison in said county agreeable to a plan to be then produced, which will be on the the 1st day of March Court, to be held for this county. Ordered, that the bounds of said prison (which is to be built on the front of the lot between John Young's and Lewis Tackett's,) be extended so as to include the garrison and house wherein George Clendennin now lives, for the safety of the prisoners from the hostile invasion of the Indian enemy."

It is proper to explain that the "bounds" of the prison above alluded to refers to a statute of Virginia specifying a certain number of feet, or yards, from a prison, beyond which prisoners were not allowed to go, under the penalty of forfeiting their bonds, or in some cases, of death itself. This peculiar statute was repealed by the adoption of the Code of 1849.

The March term of the Court for the same year contains the following order, which is given, as were the others also, *verbatim*: "Ordered, that the Sheriff do let to the lowest bidder, the building of a prison for the county of Kanawha, twelve feet square, with two floors, one of earth in the bank of the hill facing the Kanawha, and the other laid over with logs as close as possible; the house to be between floors seven feet, covered cabin fashion. The bolts, bars, and locks upon as economical a plan as possible; and the Clerk on behalf of the Court of this county give his bond to the undertaker or undertakers for the payment of the sum the said building is undertaken for; and that he also take bond and security of the undertaker or undertakers, on or before the 1st of July next to have the same completed."

This prison was built on, or rather in, the river bank, in the vicinity of the present residence of C. C. Lewis, Esq., on Kanawha street, within a few hundred feet of the Clendennin garrison or block-house; and while I have not found a record in the County Clerk's office showing the fact, still it is generally understood that Lewis Tackett, the proprietor of Tackett's Fort, at Coalsmouth, was the contractor and builder.

I find on the 4th day of November, 1795, while the work of constructing the jail was going on, the following protest entered on the Court record: "George Alderson, gentleman, Sheriff of Kanawha county, entered his dissent against the jail as being insufficient." Upon seven other occasions the same entry is made of the protest of Sheriff Alderson against the construction of the jail according to the plans and specifications before referred to. He was right. It was both unreasonable and, to say the least, inhuman to construct a prison partly under ground, when there was such a vast quantity of level land unoccupied, and timber of the largest and best qualities for such purposes standing within a few rods of the site of the underground prison pen. The jail was, however, constructed according to the order of the Court, and was used for prison purposes of the county for a number of years.

The next county jail was built by David Fuqua, a few years before the present ragged court-house was constructed, for which he received £150. Colonel Joel Ruffner, who is excellent authority for early Kanawha history, thus speaks of this jail: "It stood on the upper portion of the lot, rather in front of the present circuit court clerk's office as it now stands on the court-house lot, and quite near Kanawha street. It was built of large, square hewed logs, lined inside with planks four inches thick and from eight to twelve inches wide, sawed out of oak timber with whip-saws. These planks were spiked against the walls of the building with large wrought iron spikes. No one ever escaped from that jail," says the Colonel, "except by means of the doorway, and it was on several occasions pretty well filled with violators of the laws."

#### THE FIRST COURT HOUSE.

The first movement towards the building of a court-house for the county was made March 8, 1796. Among other transactions of the Court I find the following record as a part of the proceedings: "Ordered, that the Sheriff of this county advertise the letting of the building of the court-house to the lowest bidder at the next April term of the Court."

The contract was let for a portion of the work in the following language, *verbatim*: "That Guthridge Slaughter be allowed \$128 for doing

the inside work of the court-house in the manner following, viz : Two good floors, two doors, four windows, one pair of stairs and stair door, a fashionable seat for the Magistrates and Clerk, attorneys' table, bench and bar ; the work all to be done in a workmanlike manner, to be well chinked and daubed, together with window shutters. The said undertaker to give bond with good security for the true and faithful performance of said work in six months from this time."

The court-house was built on the same lot whereon stands the present court-house, which latter was built in 1818. The county purchased the lot from George Alderson, as shown by the following order, passed May 2, 1796, and which, by the way, is the only deed for said lot which the county has ever received : " Ordered, that George Alderson be allowed \$100 for his lot, for the purpose of erecting the public buildings thereon for this county."

At the May term, 1796, of the County Court, the following order was passed, in relation to the construction of the court-house: "Ordered, that in addition to an order of the 4th day of April last, that the undertaker of the court-house be empowered to complete the said house in a manner suitable for a court-house, and that he be allowed a sufficient and reasonable allowance for any additional work or labour he may be at in finishing the same."

Colonel Joel Ruffner thus describes the first court-house of the county : "It was a small one-story log building about thirty feet in width by forty in length. It contained two jury rooms about fourteen feet square, and stood immediately in front of the present court-house, and on the same lot. It was not by any means an attractive building, but answered very well in those days the purposes for which it was intended."

#### THE FIRST CLERK'S OFFICE.

The first County Court Clerk's office was built on the lot precisely where the Hale House now stands. It was constructed out of rough stone, was one story high, and was quite a respectable building for those days. With the exception of the roof, which was of clap-boards, it was fire-proof. The



reason why it was separated from the other public buildings, however, was to keep it out of the reach of fire.

From the County Court proceedings of April 16, 1802, I make the following extract in relation to the County Clerk's office :

"Whereas, John Reynolds has this day undertaken to build an office for the use of the present and future Clerk of this county, on the lot whereon John Reynolds, the present Clerk, now lives, and the said Reynolds to convey unto the Justices of Kenhawa county, in fee simple, title in and to forty feet square of land, part of said lot, whereon to erect the said office. The said office is to be built of stone or brick ; if of stone, the outside thereof is to be stuccoed, and the inside plastered. The height to be eleven feet between the floors ; the lower floor to be laid with good oak, or pine plank. Two windows, of eighteen lights each ; the roof to be laid with jointed shingles, well pitched ; the door, windows, and shutters to be handsomely painted, and the whole to be finished in a good, sufficient, and workmanlike manner. And the said Reynolds is authorized to call upon the Sheriff, who is directed to pay the said Reynolds the sum of two hundred dollars for the purpose of erecting the same ; and the said Reynolds and Joseph Ruffner, Jun'r, his security, are to give bond to the Justices of this Court in the sum of \$400, for the due performance of said agreement."

The present Circuit Court Clerk's office was built in 1829, and the County Court office in 1873. Neither of these buildings are creditable to the county of Kanawha, nor, in fact, are any of our public buildings. I trust that the county authorities will take the matter in hand, and erect a class of buildings for county purposes which will be a credit, and not a disgrace, to the second county, in wealth and population, in the State of West Virginia.

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE LEWIS FAMILY.

**John Lewis Refugees to America—His Four Sons—Fort Lewis—War with the Indians—Heroism of Col. Charles Lewis—His Capture by the Indians—Leaps over a Precipice—Pursued by Indians—Narrow Escape from being Bitten by a Rattlesnake—His Sufferings Alone in the Forests—Attack upon Fort Lewis by the Indians—Bravery of its Inmates—The Eldest Son—His Defect of Vision, and Scholarly Attainments—General Andrew Lewis, the Hero of Point Pleasant—Invasion by the British—The Defense at Rockfish Gap—Patriotism of Mrs. Lewis—Eulogy by General Washington—Anecdote of John Lewis—Expedition of General Braddock—Timely Interference by Major Lewis—Washington's Opinion of General Lewis—He Recommends Him to Congress—Death of General Lewis—What Stuart said of Him—The Lewis Family in Kanawha.**

The Lewis family is so intimately and closely connected with the early history of Kanawha county, that I cannot refrain from giving a brief biographical sketch of them. In fact, a history of Kanawha county without a chapter devoted to the Lewises would be imperfect indeed. The following sketch was written by a friend of the family, and was published in DeHass' History of Virginia:

"John Lewis was a native and citizen of Ireland, descended from a family of Huguenots, who took refuge in that kingdom from the persecutions that followed the assassination of Henry IV., of France. His rank was that of an esquire, and he inherited a handsome estate, which he increased by industry and frugality, until he became the lessee of a contiguous property, of considerable value. He married Margaret Lynn, daughter of the laird of Loch Lynn, who was a descendant of the chieftain of a once powerful clan in the Scottish Highlands. By this marriage he had four sons, three of them, Thomas, Andrew, and William, born in Ireland, and Charles, the child of his old age, born a few months after their settlement in their mountain home.

“For many years after the settlement at Fort Lewis,\* great amity and good will existed between the neighboring Indians and the white settlers, whose number increased until they became quite a formidable colony. It was then that the jealousy of their red neighbors became aroused, and a war broke out, which, for cool, though desperate courage and activity on the part of the whites, and ferocity, cunning and barbarity on the part of the Indians, was never equaled in any age or country. John Lewis was, by this time, well stricken in years, but his four sons, who were grown up, were well qualified to fill his place, and to act the part of the leader to the gallant little band, who so nobly battled for the protection of their homes and families. It is not my purpose to go into the details of a warfare, during which scarcely a settlement was exempt from monthly attacks of the savages, and during which Charles Lewis, the youngest son of John, is said never to have spent one month at a time out of active and arduous service. Charles was the hero of many a gallant exploit, which is still treasured in the memories of the descendants of the border riflemen, and there are few families among the Alleghanies where the name and deeds of Charles Lewis are not familiar as household words. On one occasion he was captured by the Indians while on a hunting excursion, and after traveling over two hundred miles barefooted, his arms pinioned behind, and goaded by the knives of his remorseless captors, he effected his escape. While traveling along the bank of a precipice some twenty feet in height, he suddenly, by a strong muscular exertion, burst the cords which bound him, and plunged down the steep into the bed of a mountain torrent. His persecutors hesitated not to follow. In a race of several hundred yards, Lewis had gained some few yards upon his pursuers, when, upon leaping a fallen tree which lay across his course, his strength suddenly failed and he fell prostrate among the weeds which had grown up in great luxuriance around the body of the tree. Three of the Indians sprung over the tree within a few feet of where their prey lay concealed; but with a feeling of the most devout thankfulness to a kind and superintending Providence, he saw them

---

\*This was the home of the elder Lewis. It was a few miles below the site of the present town of Staunton, and on a stream which still bears his name.

one by one disappear in the dark recess of the forest. He now bethought himself of rising from his uneasy bed, when lo ! a new enemy appeared, in the shape of an enormous rattlesnake, who had thrown himself into the deadly coil so near his face that his fangs were within a few inches of his nose ; and his enormous rattle, as it waved to and fro, once rested upon his ear. A single contraction of the eye-lid—a convulsive shudder—the relaxation of a single muscle, and the deadly reptile would have sprung upon him. In this situation he lay for several minutes, when the reptile, probably supposing him to be dead, crawled over his body and moved slowly away. ‘I had eaten nothing,’ said Lewis to his companions, after his return, ‘for many days ; I had no fire-arms, and I ran the risk of dying with hunger, ere I could reach the settlement ; but rather would I have died, than made a meal of the generous beast.’ During this war, an attack was made upon the settlement of Fort Lewis, at a time when the whole force of the settlement was out on active duty. So great was the surprise, that many of the women and children were captured in sight of the fort, though far the greater part escaped, and concealed themselves in the woods. The fort was occupied by John Lewis, then very old and infirm, his wife, and two young women, who were so much alarmed that they scarce moved from their seats upon the ground floor of the fort. John Lewis, however, opened a port-hole, where he stationed himself, firing at the savages, while Margaret reloaded the guns. In this manner he sustained a siege of six hours, during which he killed upwards of a score of savages, when he was relieved by the appearance of his party.

“Thomas Lewis, the eldest son, labored under a defect of vision, which disabled him as a marksman, and he was, therefore, less efficient during the Indian wars than his brothers. He was, however, a man of learning and sound judgment, and represented the county of Augusta many years in the House of Burgesses ; was a member of the convention which ratified the constitution of the United States and formed the constitution of Virginia, and afterwards sat for the county of Rockingham in the House of Delegates of Virginia. In 1765, he was in the House of Burgesses, and voted for Patrick Henry’s celebrated resolutions. Thomas Lewis had four sons actively participating in the war of the Revolution ; the young-

est of whom, Thomas, who is now living, bore an ensign's commission when but fourteen years of age.

"Andrew, the second son of John Lewis and Margaret Lynn, is the General Lewis who commanded at the battle of Point Pleasant.

"Charles Lewis, the youngest of the sons of John Lewis, fell at the head of his regiment, when leading on the attack at Point Pleasant. Charles was esteemed the most skilful of all the leaders of the border warfare, and was as much beloved for his noble and amiable qualities as he was admired for his military talents.

"William, the third son, was an active participator in the border wars, and was an officer of the revolutionary army, in which one of his sons was killed, and another maimed for life. When the British force under Tarleton drove the Legislature from Charlottesville to Staunton, the stillness of the Sabbath eve was broken in the latter town by the beat of the drum, and volunteers were called to prevent the passage of the British through the mountains at Rockfish Gap. The elder son of William Lewis, who then resided at the old fort, was absent with the northern army. Three sons, however, were at home, whose ages were seventeen, fifteen, and thirteen years. William Lewis was confined to his room by sickness, but his wife, with the firmness of a Roman matron, called them to her, and bade them fly to the defence of their native land. 'Go, my children,' said she, 'I spare not my youngest, the comfort of my declining years. I devote you all to my country. Keep back the foot of the invader from the soil of Augusta, or see my face no more.' When this incident was related to Washington, shortly after its occurrence, he enthusiastically exclaimed, 'Leave me but a banner to plant upon the mountains of Augusta, and I will rally around me the men who will lift our bleeding country from the dust, and set her free.'

"I have frequently heard, when a boy, an anecdote related by an old settler, somewhat to this effect:—The white, or wild clover, is of indigenous growth, and abounded on the banks of the rivers, etc. The red was introduced by John Lewis, and it was currently reported by their prophets, and believed by the Indians generally, that the blood of the red men slain by the Lewises and their followers, had dyed the trefoil to

ts sanguine hue. The Indians, however, always did the whites the justice to say, that the red man was the aggressor in their first quarrel, and that the white men of Western Virginia had always evinced a disposition to treat their red brethren with moderation and justice.

“Andrew Lewis, with four of his brothers, were in the expedition of Braddock, and exhibited marked courage and caution. Samuel commanded the company, and acquitted himself with great ability. Andrew Lewis was twice wounded at the siege of Fort Necessity. After the amnesty, and as the Virginians were marching off, an Irishman became displeased with an Indian, and ‘cursing the copper-headed scoundrel,’ elevated his gun to fire. At that moment, Major Lewis, who, crippled, was passing along, raised his staff and knocked up the muzzle of the Irishman’s rifle, thus doubtless preventing a general massacre.

“Major Lewis was made prisoner at Grant’s defeat, and his bearing on that occasion, on discovering the treachery of Grant, was a true characteristic of the man.

“Washington, at an early day, formed an exalted opinion of General Lewis’s ability as a military commander. On the breaking out of the Revolution, he recommended him to Congress ‘as one of the major-generals of the American army’—a recommendation which was slighted, in order to make room for General Stephens. It is also said, that when Washington was commissioned as commander-in-chief, he expressed a wish that the appointment had been given to General Lewis. Upon this slight in the appointment of Stephens, Washington wrote General Lewis a letter, which is published in his correspondence, expressive of his regret at the course pursued by Congress, and promising that he should be promoted to the first vacancy. At his solicitation, Lewis accepted the commission of brigadier-general, and was soon after ordered to the command of a detachment of the army stationed near Williamsburg. He commanded the Virginia troops when Lord Dunmore was driven from Gwynn’s Island, in 1776, and announced his orders for attacking the enemy by putting a match to the first gun, an eighteen-pounder, himself.

“General Lewis resigned his command in 1780, to return home, being seized ill with a fever. He died on his way, in Bedford county, about

forty miles from his own house, on the Roanoke, lamented by all acquainted with his meritorious services and superior qualities.

“ ‘ General Lewis,’ says Stuart, in his Historical Memoir, ‘ was upwards of six feet high, of uncommon strength and agility, and his form of the most exact symmetry. He had a stern and invincible countenance, and was of a reserved and distant deportment, which rendered his presence more awful than engaging. He was a commissioner with Dr. Thomas Walker, to hold a treaty, on behalf of the colony of Virginia, with the six nations of Indians, together with the commissioners from Pennsylvania, New York and other eastern provinces, held at Fort Stanwix, in the province of New York, in the year 1768. It was then remarked by the governor of New York, that “ the earth seemed to tremble under him as he walked along.” His independent spirit despised sycophantic means of gaining popularity, which never rendered more than his merits extorted.’ ”

Quite a number of the lineal descendants of General Lewis reside in this county at the present time, who are men of wealth, influence, and character.

## CHAPTER X.

## ANCIENT CIVILIZATION.

Ancient Occupancy of Central America and Mexico—Early Settlement of the United States by a Prehistoric Race—Traditions of those Countries—Mythological Proofs cited—The Northmen Discover North America in the tenth Century—The Basques and Irish Fishermen—The Fu-Sang of Japanese History—Ancient Wall on Loup Creek Mountain—Its Peculiarities—Dr. Buser's Recollections in regard to it—Mystery as to its Builders—Possibility of its being a Trap for Game—The Salt Spring on Loup Creek Island—Other Walls of a similar Kind—A Prehistoric City—Discovery of Ancient Relics—Sculptured Stones in the bed of the River—Ancient Fortifications—Mounds and Mound Builders.

Was America peopled by a race of men prior to its occupancy by the Indians? is a question often asked. Of course, I cannot enter into a discussion of this question in a history of Kanawha county. I shall only offer a few thoughts in relation to the matter, before coming to a consideration of some relics which now exist within the county, and which indicate an ancient civilization.

There is no question, in my mind, that North America, many centuries in the past, was inhabited by a prehistoric race; and I very much regret that I am not privileged, in this work, to enter into a full discussion of this very interesting question. The antiquities of Mexico and Central America reveal the strongest evidences of this position in their symbols, devices, temples, walls, and ruins of palaces, which may be found in almost every portion of those countries. And coming northward into the United States, we find ruins in almost every State, indicating an acquaintance with the mechanic arts scarcely surpassed by the civilization of the present century. Axes made of iron, saws made of copper, and wares of different kinds and qualities, have been found, which betoken a degree of civilization attained by no race of the Aborigines of this country now known to have existed.



In addition to the relics that have been discovered, we have the traditions of those countries, which are positive and explicit, that the New World was inhabited for centuries, and even hundreds of centuries, by a race of men who came from the East across the ocean, or across Behring's Straits, before it was discovered by Columbus in 1492 of our era. These traditions enumerate a number of different nations who were here, even before the Aztecs settled Mexico—among which I will mention the "Bearded white men," who were perhaps the first; then the Chichimecs, who were the uncivilized Aborigines; the Colhuas, who were regarded as refined and civilized; and the Nahuas or Toltecs, who came much later, but managed to secure power and dominion over all the other nations or tribes, if I may call them such. It is true that the center of the civilization of these tribes was, most likely, in Central America, or in Mexico, but they spread northward, until they occupied nearly all of the most beautiful and fertile portions of the United States, as indicated by the ruins of their cities, towns, and villages, thus far discovered.

The traditionary history of the early settlement of what is now termed the New World, is not confined to the nations which now inhabit it; but may be found, even in more plain and positive language, in the traditions, legends, and mythical geography of the scholars and philosophers of antiquity. Nearly all the early writers affirm the existence of a great country and a wealthy and intelligent race of people beyond the Atlantic. Plutarch speaks of the Saturnian Continent beyond the Cronian Sea (Atlantic); Solon wrote of Atlantis, Plato of the bright sunshine across the sea, and Theopompus sang of the land of Merope "far beyond the eastern shore of the great Atlantic." There are scores of other mythological legends which prove beyond a doubt that across the great seas was another and a greater country than their own, and another and, perhaps a higher civilization.

That North America was discovered by the Northmen at least five hundred years before the landing of Columbus, is now a fact of history. The race formed many colonies throughout New England, and preserve communication with each other for upwards of two hundred years. It is also a fact of history that the Northmen were preceded in Iceland

by the Irish ; and it is claimed that the Irish even preceded them in voyages to America before the beginning of the tenth century. In fact, it is claimed by Baldwin and others, that the Irishmen and the Basques were accustomed to visit the north-east coast of America, not only before its discovery by Columbus, but "from time immemorial."

It is also claimed by scholars, that a full knowledge of the American Continent existed in China and Japan many years before the time of Columbus. They maintain that their ships visited it, and that there was a regular commercial exchange of commodities, merchandise and the like, between the two countries. They called it *Fu-Sang*, and the Japanese Encyclopædia locates it "East of Japan, across the ocean, a distance of 20,000 *li*, or 7,000 miles." This knowledge is not mythical, but, on the contrary, it is positive and historical.

These statements and traditions, on the whole, prove the fact that America was inhabited by a prehistoric nation or nations, which cannot, therefore, be questioned. Much more might be said in proof of this conclusion, but as it is matter for a volume instead of a mere introduction to a chapter, I will proceed to the task which is properly before me.

#### ANCIENT WALL ON LOUP CREEK MOUNTAIN.

Among the most interesting of these relics of an ancient civilization, that exist in this county, is the stone wall extending along the top of the mountain from Armstrong's creek to Loup creek, tributaries of the Great Kanawha river. These creeks, at their confluence with the river, are two miles apart, Armstrong's creek being thirty-two miles above Charleston, and Loup creek two miles further up.

The wall commences on the west side of the mountain, fronting on the river, and lying immediately above Armstrong's creek, about one hundred yards from the top of the mountain, and follows the meanderings of the river ridge, near its top, until it reaches the slope that extends down to Loup creek, near the Big Falls. The entire length of the wall, from one extreme to the other, is perhaps three and a-half miles. It is built of flag-stones, such as are usually seen upon the surface of the ground, laid in the wall without cement or mortar, after the style of modern stone

fences. It was laid upon the top of the ground without any particularly arranged foundation, though at this time a considerable portion of it is beneath the surface. A very small portion of the wall is now standing in its original form, the most of it lying in a confused heap, or winrow of loose rock, yet plainly traceable from one end to the other.

Dr. Thomas S. Buster, who has lived near the mouth of Armstrong's creek for fifty-eight years, thus speaks of this strangely constructed wall: "When I first saw it, fifty-eight years ago, it was in a much better state of preservation than it now is. At that time a large portion of it was standing fully six or seven feet high, and was well built. Its thickness was about two feet at the base, and slightly tapered towards the top. There were a number of gates, or openings, in the wall, that are quite perceptible even at this time. They were, however, very plainly perceivable a half century ago. From the number of stones promiscuously scattered in the vicinity of the wall, my impression is that it was originally greater than seven or even eight feet in height."

Trees of all sizes and varieties may be seen growing up through the heaps of loose stones which were once built into the wall. One of these, which I particularly noticed, was a red-oak, fully three feet in diameter, and not less than four hundred years old. This would indicate that the wall had been abandoned at least that long, if not longer.

The mystery to be solved is, who were the builders of this wall, and why was it constructed? William Morris, the first permanent settler of the county, located in the vicinity of this wall in 1774; and his descendants claim that he was told by the Indians that the wall was there when the latter came into the Valley. It is quite clear, to every inquiring mind, that the Indians were not its builders, but that it was no doubt constructed by the same race that built the mounds, and inhabited the territory of the United States for centuries prior to its settlement by the Indians.

The object of such a structure as a wall along the top of a mountain several thousand feet high, and so rough and steep that a goat could scarcely climb to where it stood, is hard to understand. It could not have been intended for a fortification, for the simple reason that it was in-

accessible to friend as well as foe ; and, besides, it would have taken an immense piece of artillery to have been of any value in such a position. I can imagine no other purpose for which it could have been made, than a trap for game.

On a small island in the Kanawha river, a short distance below the mouth of Loup creek, is a salt spring, which, in former years, was a noted "buffalo lick." It was almost constantly thronged with deer, elk, and buffaloes, which visited it for its saline waters. From the gaps in the stone wall on the mountain above it, and the great quantities of bones that are found, even at this day, at those pass-ways, the old settlers are of opinion that the deer, elk, and buffaloes were started from the spring by dogs and hunters, and in their flight up the mountain would reach this wall, and not being able to pass over it, would follow the meanderings of the wall until they reached an opening, where they passed through and were slain by the guards who had been previously stationed for that purpose. This seems to be the only use to which it could have been applied, and no doubt this was the object for which it was built.

On the top of the mountain, fronting on the Kanawha river, immediately above the mouth of Paint creek, is a stone wall similar to the one on Loup creek mountain. It is about a-half mile in length, and was in some places ten feet high, and had an average thickness of four to five feet. The workmanship of this wall is of a better class than that displayed in the construction of the one at Loup creek, the wall being much stronger and higher:

#### AN ANCIENT CITY.

At Clifton, twenty-three miles above Charleston, on the Kanawha river, there is every indication of a once populous town or city, which was inhabited by a race now extinct. At this point the river makes a short bend, very much in the shape of a horse-shoe, and a more beautiful site for a town cannot be found anywhere in West Virginia. It is a natural location for a city, for in addition to the hundred or more acres of rolling land in this smooth bend of a picturesque river; there is a large coal field all around it, embracing perhaps nearly every class of coal that is

found in West Virginia, which is a great source of wealth, and will some day, during its development, afford employment to hundreds of laborers.

In this village three cellars have been dug by the citizens, and in each case an entire human skeleton was exhumed. A square of ground embracing about ten acres in that portion of the village fronting the river, seems to have been set apart for a cemetery. In digging every cellar and well, and even every post-hole, greater or less numbers of human bones have been discovered. Earthen-ware of a superior quality has been dug up; also bone necklaces, carved shells, bone fish-hooks, and an image carved in stone, have been taken from beneath the surface in this beautiful little village. Mr. Marshall Hansford, while digging a post-hole in his yard a few years ago, found, about eighteen inches below the surface, nine pieces of sheet copper, several inches square, and rolled very thin. In digging his cellar he found the skeleton of a large-sized man, and a great variety of bones of birds, bears, and other wild animals. As a proof that these skeletons, relics and the like, were remains of an ancient race, I need only to inform the reader that not long before these discoveries were made, the earth above them was literally covered with stalwart sycamores, which Mr. Hansford informed me were fully five hundred years of age.

#### SCULPTURED STONES.

About two and a-half miles below the mouth of Paint creek, and twenty miles above Charleston, at the edge of the river, was a large flat stone, perhaps twenty feet square, called by the old settlers the "picture rock." It was imbedded in the river, near the shore, and was not visible except during low water. It was literally covered with pictures of different animals, including turkeys, bears, deer, elk, fish, etc.; and across the center of it was a large buffalo track cut deep in the stone. On the perpendicular face of the stone was the image of a man from the waist upwards; a little above, and to one side of the man, was a large bear—natural size—with his mouth wide open, in close proximity to the man's head.

Two miles above this large sculptured stone was a smaller one, on

which were engraved seven or eight tracks of a baby's foot, which were intended to represent the child as walking across the stone.

A short distance above the village of Clifton, in the bed of the river, was still another stone, on which was neatly carved a large fish. Some person undertook to carry this stone away for the purpose of making a hearth, and broke it in twain; one piece, however, still remains in the river.

These stones resembled the one that laid in the bottom of the river near the mouth of Campbell's creek, which will be described in another chapter. They were undoubtedly engraved by the same race of men, that unquestionably understood the art of sculpturing to a very considerable extent.

The ruthless hand of the destroyer has relentlessly fallen upon all of these historic stones, and they have been quarried and removed for building purposes. It seems strange that men of intelligence would destroy such interesting relics of an ancient habitancy and civilization of the land in which they live.

#### ANCIENT FORTIFICATIONS.

In several portions of the original county of Kanawha may be seen remains of ancient fortifications dug in the earth. The object, or purpose for which they were constructed, is a matter of conjecture. The general conclusion, however, seems to be that they were used as forts for the protection of those who constructed them against real or supposed enemies. It is a strange fact, that in their construction the use of stone for walls and the like was omitted by their builders. They were constructed by making an excavation, either circular or square, in the ground, to the depth of many feet, leaving a graded doorway for an entrance in each of two sides, generally directly opposite each other. If covered at all, timber must have been used, as there is nothing remaining to indicate any class of materials except the earth itself. If they were occupied as forts, it would of course be necessary to have had some kind of covering, and the natural conclusion is that timber was employed for that purpose.

The largest of these fortifications that has been discovered within the county, which has come to my knowledge, is the one on Coal river at the mouth of Bull creek, six miles below Peytona and thirty miles from the Great Kanawha. It is an exact square, and embraces between one and two acres. It is now, perhaps, five or six feet in depth, but originally was two or three times that deep. It has been filled up around its borders so that the land can be cultivated. The next one in size is situated on the Great Kanawha river, now in Putnam county, on the land of General George C. Bowyer, about half a mile below the town of Winfield. It is circular in shape, is about two hundred feet in diameter, and resembles a very large circus ring. Another one of these ancient constructions may be seen on the north side of Elk river, one mile from its confluence with the Kanawha, and near the mouth of the Magazin branch. It is about the size of the one on General Bowyer's farm, and was evidently built for the same purpose and by the same race of men.

#### MOUNDS.

The "mound builders" were, in my opinion, the first settlers of the United States. These mounds are usually called "Indian mounds," but no well informed person will, in the latter part of this, the nineteenth century, persist in claiming that the Indians had anything whatever to do with them. They were built by a prehistoric race, as a token of respect for their honored dead. They vary materially both in their size and construction. Some of them are round, others are oblong, and still others are nearly square. Some of them have a flag-stone wall immediately around the bones of the departed, with the dirt thrown upon, and even inside the wall; while others, again, have a cone-shaped stone wall the inside of which is ten feet or more in diameter, and reaching fifteen feet in height, wherein may be seen the remains of the dead. The earth, of course, was thrown upon and around this wall, in some cases making the mound seventy-five to one hundred feet in diameter and thirty feet in height.

The largest of these mounds that I have visited in different portions of the county, is on the south side of the Kanawha river, near

Spring Hill Station, perhaps five miles below Charleston, and about midway in the wide river bottom at that place. I had no means of making an exact measurement of it, but will be safe in saying that it is seventy-five feet in diameter and fully thirty feet high. It is a perfect mound, and is covered over with a luxuriant growth of large trees. On the opposite side of the river, a short distance below, may be seen a group of these mounds near together, of various sizes. The timber has been cut off of them, and they are gradually washing away, though it may be many centuries before they will be leveled with the low lands of the Valley. In most every portion of the county these mounds may be found, though of much smaller size than the ones to which I have alluded.

Dr. Buster informed me that, fifty-eight years ago, a stone mound stood on a narrow bottom of Armstrong's creek, about a-half mile from its mouth, of peculiar proportions and appearance. It was about fifteen feet in diameter at the base, and ran up gradually to a point, perhaps ten feet from the ground. The wall was about two feet in thickness, and in one side of it was a small doorway. In the center of the mound was a large red-oak tree, fully two feet in diameter, which he made into rails; the falling of the tree destroyed the stone wall or mound. About four hundred yards below the mouth of Paint creek stood another stone structure similar to the one above described, though much larger. It has, however, been almost totally demolished, and but few traces of it now remain.



## CHAPTER XI.

## EARLY CUSTOMS, INCIDENTS, AND INVENTIONS.

Dress of Pioneers—Hunting Shirts, Short Gowns and Moccasins—Occupations of the First Settlers—Primitive Furniture—Of what it Consists and how Made—Table-ware, and Diet—House Warmings—Log Rollings—House Raisings—Corn Huskings—Quiltings—The Dance—"Black Bettie"—Scarcity of Professional Men—Pioneer Preachers—The "Doctors" and their Remedies—Lawyers and their Fees—School Teachers—Text Books for Scholars—Old-time Institutions—Hominy, Blocks, Graters and Horse Mills—Home Tanneries and Shoe Shops—Mechanics—Snakes—Where Found and how Killed—Forts and Block-houses—When Occupied, etc., etc.

I have spent considerable time investigating the manners and customs of our forefathers ; and feeling assured that these subjects will be of interest to the general reader, I shall, therefore, devote a special chapter to the dissemination of such facts respecting the same as I have been able to collect. I shall, therefore, commence with a description of the

## DRESS OF THE PIONEER.

The men wore "hunting shirts," and the women dressed in "petticoats and short gowns." The hunting shirt was a long jeans garment, having a large cape attached, and a belt that extended around the body. The skirt and cape were bordered with a heavy fringe, generally of a bright color. A gentleman was not considered elegantly dressed unless he wore one of these coats. The skirt of the ladies' garments was made of linsey or flannel, and the "short gown" was manufactured from the same class of material, though generally of another color, and similar in style to the modern sacque, extending only a short distance below the waist.

The ladies on special occasions wore "leghorn bonnets," and for

"every day" they were accustomed to wear an ordinary flannel hood. The leghorn bonnets were quite costly—the lowest price for which they could be purchased being \$10, and they generally cost from \$20 to \$40.

Everybody wore moccasins, made from dressed buckskin. They were often elegantly finished, costing much both of time and of labor. These fancy beaded moccasins were only made for extra occasions. Those worn on ordinary occasions were stitched together in the simplest manner imaginable. In cold weather they were stuffed with fur and deer hair, and, if the weather was dry, kept their feet quite comfortable; but during rainy weather they were but little better than no shoes at all, on account of the spongy texture of the leather of which they were made.

Many of our earliest pioneer citizens dressed themselves after the manner of the Indians, wearing, during the summer season, nothing but a breech-cloth, extending from the waist to the middle of the thigh; during the winter, they wore buckskin leggings, and a blanket loosely thrown around their shoulders.

It is quite evident that neither the ladies nor the gentlemen who first inhabited this Valley, gave much time or thought to their dress. The ladies, in those days, instead of wearing fine clothes and spending their time practicing on the grand piano, were occupied from early morn till late at night spinning wool and flax, or weaving the yarn, thus made, into fabrics with which to make clothing for their scanty and simple wardrobes. Their unpretentiousness and industry were models indeed, worthy of being followed by the ladies of the present day.

#### PRIMITIVE FURNITURE.

The furniture of our forefathers in the Kanawha Valley was not rich, elegant, or abundant. Only a few of the mansions even, of the early settlers, were ornamented with what we are now pleased to call a bedstead, and so far as the cottages and cabins were concerned, this seemingly indispensable article of furniture was scarcely known. The most of these were "home-made," and that too, of the simplest construction. For instance, two auger holes were bored in the wall, into which were driven

rough pieces of wood, the two outer ends being each supported by an upright piece which displayed no better workmanship. Rope tugs, made from buffalo hides, answered in place of "bed-cords." And this was the pioneer's bedstead.

Instead of cushioned sofas and cane-bottomed chairs, their *parlors* were furnished with puncheon benches and octagonal stools; and as a substitute for the piano, the spinning-wheel, with steady hum, made the hills echo with its melodious sounds.

Their dishes were made of pewter and of wood, their knives were those carried in their belts, and their forks were their fingers. They had no cups and saucers, of queensware and silverware they knew nothing, and to them the word *style* was a meaningless expression. Their diet consisted chiefly of pork, hominy, (by them called "hog and hominy,") potatoes, and coffee made from chestnuts. Notwithstanding the simplicity and coarseness of their diet, they were blessed with good health, and the enjoyment of life in their rural habitations was not less than that of the millionaire in his mansion or the king upon his throne.

#### HOUSE WARMINGS.

When a house was built it was dedicated by a "house warming." This consisted of all the neighbors—men and women, old and young—gathering in and holding a dance from dark till daylight. These occasions were looked forward to by the young people with a great degree of interest; they were surpassed only by weddings and "infairs," which were attended with double the amount of dancing and two good dinners thrown in, and of course were the great events of every neighborhood and every season.

#### FARM GATHERINGS.

The log-rollings, house-raising, corn-huskings, and quiltings of the old citizens were extraordinary occasions. All the neighbors, men and women, came from every section of the settlement. The men labored in the fields while the ladies worked on quilts. There could be no log-rolling, house-raising, or corn-husking without a quilting. The presence

f the ladies was essential to the enjoyment of such occasions. They were not only needed to assist in cooking and quilting, but their presence was also necessary to the successful conducting of the dance, which always followed such gatherings. They worked hard all day and danced all night, and would make a hand in the field, or at the wheel or loom next day.

In those days everybody drank wine and whisky. "Black Betty" was the central attraction at the log-rollings, corn-huskings, house-raising, and quiltings. It passed around every few minutes during the dance as well as in the field, and it was an unusual occurrence for anybody to refuse to "kiss her lips," as they called drinking out of the bottle; and strange as it may seem to the modern tippler, men or women rarely, if ever, became intoxicated. While it was their custom to drink often, it was also their practice to keep within the bounds of good judgment and temperance.

Lest some might not fully understand the intention of these old-time gatherings, I shall briefly explain them in the order mentioned.

The settlers located in the woods, and cleared their land by grubbing the shrubbery out by the roots, and chopping the trees down and rolling them into heaps, and burning them. After having made ready to pile the heavy timber preliminary to burning, they called in their neighbors to assist them in rolling the logs together. The timber was usually of such a size as to require a number of men to handle it; hence the necessity of "log-rollings." Besides, it afforded a jollification and a re-union of frontiersmen, which added much to their comfort and happiness. That would have been a dull and lazy neighborhood indeed which could not afford more than ten or a dozen "log-rollings" every spring.

A "corn-husking" was simply a gathering of the neighbors for the purpose of assisting one another to remove the husks from the ears of Indian corn, which sometimes stood in the fields in shocks, or had been "snapped" and gathered into barns. As a rule, men at "corn-huskings" did, by far, more talking than work, and drank a great deal more whisky than water, coffee, or anything else. Like the "log-rollings" and

"house-raising," these gatherings afforded great glee, enjoyment, and sport.

"House-raising," like "log-rollings" and "corn-huskings," were also essential. It would be impossible for one, or even six men to raise a house. The logs were cut, hewed, and placed on the site for the building before the neighbors were called together. Having assembled for the "raising," one man was assigned to each corner of the building to "carry up the corners," others were employed in "notching the logs," others to handle the "skids," and others, stationed on the building, to "pull on the ropes," while still others, with long poles with a fork on the end were to push the logs up the "skids" to their proper places in the building. This was a simple, but laborious process, and was a source of great enjoyment and recreation to those who participated in it.

Last of all, but by no means the least, was the "quilting." It was an interesting sight to behold fifteen or twenty old spectacled women and as many young ladies, seated around a quilt frame, stitching away with needles, in the "old-fashioned way," following circles, semi-circles, curved and straight lines, diamonds, hearts, and every other imaginable shape and form. At a "big quilting" from three to five quilts were put up in good style and made ready for a place on the feather beds, which adorned every household.

Following all these labors came the dance, which, perhaps, was the most attractive feature of all, to a majority of those who attended the "workings." The "Old Virginia reel" was the principal figure followed on the puncheon floors of the pioneers, and although not as elegant as a modern polka or schottish, it was equally as enjoyable, and was more earnestly participated in.

#### PROFESSIONAL MEN.

Professional men were rarely found among the early settlers. Once in a great while the circuit-rider would preach to the people, who gathered in, many of them from a great distance, to attend divine service. A *circuit* embraced two or three of the primitive counties, which would now be equal to fully one-half of the State; and although the circuit-rider

preached a sermon every day and every night, it took him from six to eight weeks to "make the round." The sermons of these primitive preachers were often very effective. Scores of rude woodsmen and their families have been converted at a single service. In early times, under the preaching of able ministers, people would take what was called the "jerks," and would fall to the floor, and writhe and distort their features and bodies very much like a person in an epileptic fit. This was supposed to be the power of the Spirit in casting unholiness from the body and soul of the sinner. I shall have more to say upon this subject while giving the religious history of the county.

Doctors were even scarcer than preachers. A professional physician was almost as useless as a fifth wheel to a wagon, for two reasons: First, the people were rarely afflicted with diseases of any kind; and second, the old women were always ready to treat, with herb teas, any kind of sickness that came around, and nearly always effected cures.

Salt and water, copperas water, corn meal and scraped potato poultices, roasted onions, hot baths and sweats, white plantain, winter fern, herb teas, and cupping and bleeding were the principal remedies for diseases of all kinds, including snake-bites.

Rheumatism was the great pest to the men, occasioned by getting their feet wet. Their moccasins were made of buckskin, which, owing to its flabby texture, would let the water through to the feet almost as readily as a piece of cloth. The result, therefore, of a few minutes' walk in the rain or snow would be wet feet, and the natural consequence thereof would be rheumatism. There were two remedies for this disease:

1. Application of wet sheets.
2. Sleeping with the feet towards a hot fire.

These were simple, but generally effectual remedies.

Lawyers were almost entirely unknown to the first settlers. It was a rare thing for disputes between them to be taken into Court, hence as a rule lawyers were unnecessary. One or more of them, however, usually lived at each county seat, and were always ready to give their professional services to those who might need them, for which they were paid in provisions, tobacco, or money—the three "legal tenders" of that day.

School-teachers were almost as scarce as lawyers or doctors, yet once in



SCHOOL AND MEETING HOUSE.

a great while a professional pedagogue would come along, who was always engaged to "teach the young idea how to shoot." School would open shortly after daylight and continue until sundown, giving, in the meantime, a recess of one hour for dinner. Dilworth's and Webster's spelling books were, as a rule, the only text-books used, though once in a while a student could be found far enough advanced to take up Pike's Arithmetic, Dwight's Geography, and the New Testament, as a reader. Schools never continued longer than two months during a year; and quite often an entire year would pass without a school having been taught in any of the neighborhoods. The older people knew but little themselves, and seemed to feel but a slight concern in the education of their children. Then, as now, the great weakness of the citizens of this Valley was a lack of interest in the cause of general education among all classes. It is, however, proper and just to add that the people are now awaking to a sense of duty in this regard; and it is hoped that they will not weary in well doing, and will continue to push forward the car of education, until every citizen shall be blessed at least with a knowledge of the common English branches.

## OLD-TIME INSTITUTIONS.

While it is true that fine mills, tanneries, blacksmith shops and the like, were not known among the early settlers, still they provided them-



CAPTURE OF LEWIS TACKETT BY THE INDIANS.





selves with substitutes for all these, which answered the purpose for which they were intended, and met the want of every emergency.

The hominy block, grater, and horse-mill, answered in place of the steam grist-mill of the present day. A hominy block was a basin chiseled in a large stone, or burnt in a large block of wood, in which, by means of a pestle, corn was pounded into hominy and meal. The grater was made of tin after the style of a nutmeg grater, only much larger, on which corn was grated into meal before it became sufficiently dry to shell off the cob. The horse-mill was constructed with a pair of burrs in the same manner as the stones now in use in grist-mills, and was run by horse-power attached to a lever fifteen or twenty feet in length. The horse-mill was superseded by the "tub-mill"—a small mill run by water.



"TUB-MILL."

power. These water-mills are quite common throughout the county at the present day. During the winter season, when the creeks are high, they run quite rapidly and grind a considerable quantity of corn, but in the summer they completely "dry up."

In place of the bolting machine for cleaning flour, sieves were used, operated by hand. These sieves were made by stretching a tanned deer-skin over a cheese hoop, drum fashion, and perforating it with holes by means of a hot wire.

In after years each family had its "vats" and tanned its own leather. A vat was a large trough buried in the ground, which was filled with water and tan-bark broken into fine pieces. The leather was placed in these troughs and allowed to remain about six months, when it was

"lifted," curried with an inverted drawing knife, softened with bear's oil, and blackened with soot and hog's lard. The leather was rough and coarse, but was of a superior quality, and made good, though by no means neat, boots and shoes.

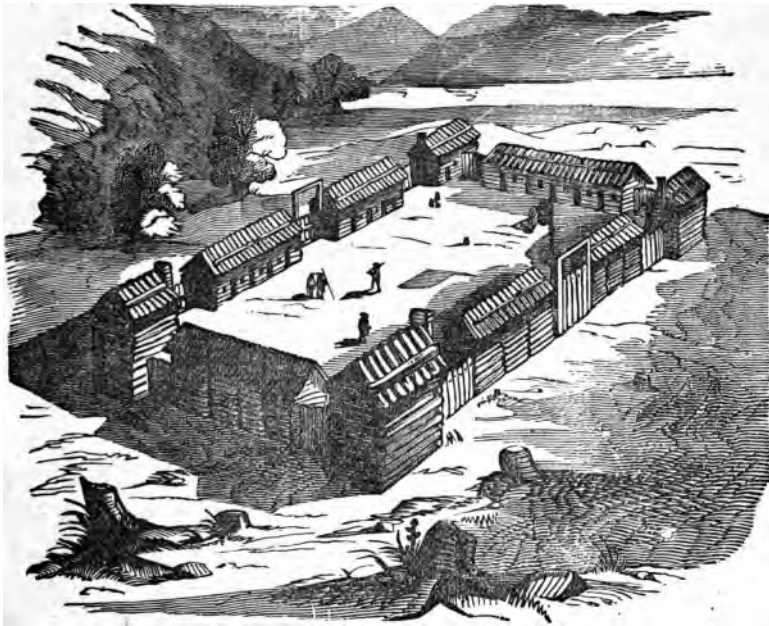
It was the province of the head of every family to make up the home-made leather into home-made shoes; and it was likewise the duty of the matron to manufacture all the clothing that was worn by the family.

The absence of regular tradesmen among the pioneers called into action the genius of every natural mechanic. Some men were more ingenious than others, and, with but little practice, succeeded in manufacturing neat and useful articles for the farm and household. With the limited number of tools with which they had to work, these "mechanics" certainly did wonders. They made their own horse-shoes, shod their own horses, made their plows, harrows, and rakes; also their buckets, barrels, bowls, ladels, churns, looms and the like, were manufactured in every farm-house. Carpenters, blacksmiths, tailors, and shoemakers, as such, were unknown to the early settlers. As the years passed away, however, and the settlements became numerous and permanent, regular mechanics located among them, and of course added much to the conveniences and improvements in the manner of living.

#### SNAKES.

Next to the Indians, rattlesnakes and copperheads were most dreaded by the early settlers. The woods and fields were literally over-run with them. Some days a dozen or more of these poisonous serpents were killed in one harvest field. Not only were the men exposed to the dangerous bite of these serpents, but the women, who usually attended wholly to the cultivation of "flax patches," which were delightful resorts for the rattlesnake, were alike subject to the same danger. At the sight of one of these venomous reptiles the women would utter a shriek, when a man would come to their relief, and by means of a club, which they carried with them for that purpose, would kill the snake. When a person was bitten by one of these reptiles, it was a rare thing to survive.

In the fall, these reptiles congregated in dens and cliffs of rocks, where



THE BLOCKHOUSE.



they remained until spring, when the warm sun would revive them into life. During cold weather their dens were often visited by the settlers, who would dig the serpents out of their hiding places and kill them by the hundred.

## FORTS.

A block-house or stockade was essential to the protection of every frontier settlement. It was constructed by planting large sized logs four or five feet deep into the ground, reaching perhaps fifteen or twenty feet above ground, on two sides of a square containing an acre or more of ground, the other sides being occupied by log houses, built in close proximity to each other, in which the people lived during certain seasons of the year. Dr. Doddridge, in his "Notes on Virginia," thus describes a pioneer fort :

"The block-houses were built at the angles of the fort. They projected about two feet beyond the outer walls of the cabins and stockades. Their upper stories were about eighteen inches every way larger in dimensions than the under one, leaving an opening at the commencement of the second story to prevent the enemy from making a lodgment under their walls. In some forts, instead of block-houses, the angles of the fort were furnished with bastions. A large folding gate made of thick slabs, nearest the spring, closed the fort. The stockades, bastions, cabins, and block-house walls were furnished with port-holes at proper heights and distances. The whole of the outside was made completely bullet-proof; and, strange to say, the whole of this work was made without a single nail or spike of iron."

The families attached to these forts lived on their farms in the winter time, but during the spring, summer and fall, they were compelled to live within the fort, in order to protect themselves from the murderous attacks of roving Indians. During the winter the savages remained in their wigwams, and scarcely ever wandered more than a few miles away while in pursuit of game; but when the warm seasons returned, they painted themselves and entered upon the war path, and attacked the settler from some ambush when he was least expecting their presence.

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE HERMIT.

The Settlement near the Mouth of Elk River—Character of the Settlers—Description of the Scenery—The Two Sons, and the Daughter—Their Occupations—The Flight of Time—The Peace of that Eden Broken—The Young Man abandons his Home and Friends—Reason given—His Western Home and Hermit Life—Visits Chillicothe—Wild Appearance—The Dog—Cave Discovered—Piketon—Turnpike and Canal—Death of the Hermit—His Tomb, Monument and Name.

“Towards the close of the last century, [between 1775 and 1780,] there lived, not far from the mouth of Elk river, in the county of Kanawha, amid the unbroken wilds of Western Virginia, an old hunter, who at an early day, with his companion, a man of similar habits, had started out in advance of either exploration or settlement, for the purpose of having an unlimited hunting range amid the mountains, peculiar to this section.” At that time the country hereabouts was so savagely wild that its dark mountains, gloomy dells, and deep solitudes were looked upon with dread even by the Indians. The greatest enemies, therefore, of our adventurers were the wild beasts of the wilderness.

No wilder Eden of delight, where man might commune with nature, could be found, certainly not in Virginia, than the region that surrounded our adventurers; a place indeed where the valleys were literally fenced in by almost unsurmountable mountains. These early settlers were, certainly, not quite so wild as the animals which roamed through the forests, yet, so far as “book learning” was concerned, they were quite as ignorant. Still they were pure minded, honorable, and happy. Far happier, indeed, than those who, in more modern times, thronged the great cities and made their livings by misrepresentations, stealing, and fraud.



THE HERMIT.





It is said that men are happier and more contented in the same proportion as they approach to a state of nature. In some regards, this is correct. It is certainly true, if we are to judge from the lives of those who pioneered the paths of civilization in our own country. No mortals could be happier than they were, in their log cabins amid the wilds of these primeval forests.

But I am wandering from the two hunters who settled near the mouth of Elk river. They did not come alone from the eastern portion of the State. They brought their families with them from the land of their nativity. One of the hunters had two sons, fine looking, healthy, vigorous boys, inured to hardships and privations from their birth; the other was blessed with but one child, and that a daughter.

It is needless to say that these children were the idols of their parents. The children of all parents, whether plebeian or patrician, are always idolized. The boys were rugged and stalwart; the girl was as fair as the wild flowers that grew upon the hill-sides, and as pure as the snow that caps the crests of the eternal hills. The place they selected to build their cabins was a niche in the hill-side, and side by side were constructed their rural homes. The hunters with the boys spent their time mostly in the woods, while the women and the young lady attended to the housework, tanned the skins, and dressed the furs;—there was always peace in those two households. They were Eden homes, and yet were not envied by the rich, the fair, and the gay. Their inmates were governed by the teachings of that grand old Book, coeval with the pyramids, which has come down to us, preserved intact like those gigantic monuments of the past, and in which we read, "How good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity."

Years passed away, during which time our hunters had cleared many broad acres. The boys had now grown, and the girl had bloomed into womanhood. Till then happiness had reigned supreme in all their hearts, as well as in their homes. But this secluded Eden must soon be blasted, and these former happy hearts must ere long bleed with sorrow.

Eight spring suns had cast their golden rays upon these mountain homes, but the ninth one brought with it a sore bereavement. James, the

younger son, was missing. In vain they sought him from valley to valley. In vain they called his name, and could only hear the echo resounding from hill-top to hill-top. His rifle and hunting equipments were also missing. Could it be possible that he had gone to a far off settlement, or had he been killed or taken prisoner by the Indians? Now, since he had gone, all recollected that he had worn a forlorn look for some time past for which no reason could be given. Days and nights had passed, and yet no tidings from the missing and the lost. The hearts of all were bleeding, and strong frames were bowed in anguish; yet relief could not be found. The young lady held the secret, but she had resolved that it should die with her. The situation, however, was too serious to carry out that resolve. She staggered to the couch of the weeping mother, and, amid tears and anguish, informed her that James was not dead; that the morning before he left the settlement, he told her that he loved her, and asked her to be his wife, which offer she declined, and gave for her reason that she loved his brother, and had agreed to become his wife. This was too much for James to endure, and he bade her farewell forever, and sought alone another home. This gave partial relief, and the hope was cherished that some day he would return; but summers and winters, many in number, came and passed, yet James' face was seen no more in those cabins on the hill-side.

After leaving the settlement, the young man made his way down the Kanawha to Point Pleasant, thence across the Ohio, through a trackless wilderness, to the settlement on the Scioto river. He had, however, not only determined to leave home forever, but also made the rash resolve that he would live the life of a hermit. He, therefore, pushed his march west of the frontier habitation of the pale-face, until he reached a rocky glen, hedged in by bending trees and towering mountains. No human foot had ever marked the soil in this lonely retreat. Here he decided to take up his abode. He extemporized a fire-place at the mouth of the cave, and with flint and steel kindled the first fire which, perhaps, had ever been started by a white man west of the Scioto settlement. With leaves and moss he made a bed, on which he rested after the usual exercises of the day—trapping and hunting for furs and game. Locke

up in the prison of the wild woods, far from home and friends, with no voice to comfort him save the shrill sound of the whippoorwill, and nothing to cheer him but his well-tried and faithful rifle, he remained day after day and week after week, until his ammunition was exhausted. He could not return to his home in the Kanawha Valley, because to do so would break his pledge. He could not forsake his lonely retreat, for thus he would also break the resolution he had made, henceforth to live the life of a hermit. He must, however, have powder and lead, or otherwise suffer for food, for he had no other way to procure game than by means of his trusty rifle. He therefore directed his steps towards Chillicothe, to purchase a supply of ammunition. On arriving at that village, he exchanged his furs for a good supply of hunting material, and without making himself known to any one, nor leaving any hint by which his whereabouts might be discovered, he started again to his lonely habitation in the denseness of the far-away forest.

During his few hours stay in the village, however, many questions were asked him by anxious and curious citizens, with the object of finding out who he was, where he was from, and whither he was going. But all failed to gain the information desired. On leaving the village a dog followed him to his cave in the woods, despite every effort on his part to drive him back. This new acquaintance became his true and tried friend and companion for the many years that he lived in the rocky cave beyond the haunts of men; that his company and friendship were valued by the hermit will not be questioned, and that he was a useful companion is also an admissible fact. As the sun was falling low in the West they reached the cave, and, after a supper of pheasant and dried venison, retired to rest.

The conclusion of this interesting narrative I copy from the work of W. P. Strickland, entitled the "Pioneers of the West:"

"He remained in his solitary home all winter, when he was not out hunting for game, and saw no one since he left Chillicothe. Early, however, in the spring, a company of surveyors were sent out to locate a road from Chillicothe to Piketon, a distance of about twenty miles. They would labor all day, surveying the most practicable route and driv-

ing their stakes, and at night would camp out. On one occasion he was surprised by a party of these surveyors, who had grown scarce of provisions, and had gone out on a hunt. One of the party recognized him as the stranger with the skins at Chillicothe, though months had passed since he saw him. They seemed glad at falling in with him, as they had been unsuccessful in procuring game; and, knowing that he was a practiced hunter, besought him to take them where there was game, promising to reward him by furnishing him with ammunition. To their proposal he assented, and after traveling a few miles they started a deer. Instantly every gun was fired, so anxious was the party, but without effect, as the deer bounded away. He did not, however, get out of sight before the unerring aim of the Elk mountain hunter brought him to the ground.

“‘There, men,’ said he, ‘is your game;’ and with that he bounded away, and they saw him no more.

“The road was made; and as the hermit had several times been seen in that locality years afterward by travelers and hunters, it was generally believed that he made his home somewhere near, or on the Dividing Ridge. Having found out the locality of Piketon, a village situated on the Scioto, the location of which by Simon Kenton and his party in 1795, occasioned the unhappy death of Miller, whose bones are interred beneath the bank which bears his name, he went to that place, instead of Chillicothe, the next time he wished to barter his skins for ammunition. Here he was equally an object of wonder and astonishment, both from the peculiarity of his dress and the wildness of his manners. It was not long until he was pretty generally known, though to all entreaties about his mysterious mode of life he was silent. Many were the surmises as to the cause of his abandoning the society of his species, and living the life of a hermit; but it was not until toward the close of his life that the secret became known. His cave was at last found by a hunter, who left him some corn bread, and it was afterward frequently visited. He had inhabited it, unmolested, for many years, and none but his own foot had crossed the threshold. Much as he dreaded the invasion of his fellowman, he had become too much attached to his home to leave it, and, besides, he was growing old, and he concluded to

end his days there. In the mean time, wild and broken as the region was, other settlers had come in and erected their cabins, some within a few miles of him.

"Years passed, and in the progress of improvement a canal, leading from Chillicothe to Portsmouth, was constructed, which passed to the east of him not many miles. It was finished, and other improvements begun, while farms were opening all around him ; still he clung to this wild, sequestered spot.

"One day, in a deserted shanty on the bank of the canal, he was found lying sick and unattended, except by his faithful dog. How long he had been there none knew. All who had seen him, or heard of him, felt an interest in him ; and when it was known that the hermit was thus exposed, he was visited by friends, who took him to Waverly, and procured for him a physician and nurse. But his sickness was unto death, his wanderings at an end. He breathed his last, and was buried in the village graveyard.

"Some years after his death a turnpike road was laid out between Chillicothe and Portsmouth, and it was located so as to run right by the side of the hermit's cave. After the road was finished, the bones of the hermit were removed to the cave, its mouth was filled up with heavy masonry, and on the surface of the rock above, a monument was erected. And now, as the traveler crosses the Dividing Ridge, on one of the most smooth, beautiful, and romantically winding Macadamized roads we ever saw, and comes in sight, as he descends toward Pleasant Valley, a village which has recently sprung up, he will see on his left a plain obelisk of stone, bearing the inscription,

"ERECTED TO THE MEMORY OF

JAMES HEWITT,\*

THE HERMIT."

---

\*It is proper for me to state that this family of Hewitts was not related to the Hewitts who came to Kanawha in 1837, many of whose descendants are now living within the county.

## CHAPTER XIII.

## EARLY TRADITIONS.

John Young discovers Indian tracks near Jarretts Ford—His alarm—Meets a party of Pursuers—Flight up Little Sandy Creek—Discovery of the Indians' Camp—Dawn of Day—Preparations for the Attack—Six Shots fired—Painted White Man Killed—Narrow Escape of John Griffith—His Narrative—Strange Creek—Interesting Circumstances Connected with its name—Massacre of Henry Morris' Daughters—The Flight to the Fort—Vow of Henry Morris—Narrow Escape of William Carroll—Massacre of the Wheeler Family—Murder of James Staten—Killing of Shadrach Harmon—Hale's Spring—Murder of Hale—Paint Creek—Bell Creek—Indian Creek—Flight of Fleming Cobbs—He pushes a Canoe from Point Pleasant to Charleston in Fourteen Hours—Pursued by Savages—Capture of Robert Hughes—Two years a Prisoner—His Escape—Incidents of his Captivity—Murder of William Wyatt—A Presentiment—Ann Bailey—Her Services as Spy and Messenger—Tacketts Pine—Miraculous Escape of Lewis Tackett, etc., etc.

For sometime past I have been engaged in procuring facts relating to the early traditions of this county, and here present the most important of them, as nearly as I can, in the chronological order of their occurrence.

## WHITEMAN'S FORK OF LITTLE SANDY.

Shortly after 1780, a trapper, supposed to have been John Young, while descending Elk river in a canoe, noticed on a large flat stone, which rose a few inches above the surface of the stream, at Jarrett's Ford, some fresh human tracks, toeing toward the western bank. Supposing that they had been made by Indians, he looked further, and discovered where they led up the bank on the north side of the river. Being satisfied that the party were not far away, and that he would not be able to contend with them alone, he left his canoe and started for Clendennin's fort, (Charleston,) a distance of twelve miles. He had not proceeded far, however, when he met "Ben" Morris, a well-known scout of that day, in



SURPRISING AN INDIAN CAMP ON LITTLE SANDY CREEK.





company with "Bob" Aaron, William Arbuckle, and two others, who had heard that the Indian's tracks had crossed Kelly's creek westward, and were now pushing on with the hope of intercepting them at the ford of Elk. It did not take much time to comprehend the meaning of what the trapper told them. They proceeded at once to the ford, and started thence in pursuit on the fresh trail which they found and followed without difficulty; they ascertained that the tracks left Little Sandy creek and turned up Aaron's Fork, a left branch, which heads against Pocatalico river.

It was getting well on to sunset, and the freshness of the tracks indicated that the Indians could not be far in advance of their pursuers. This made the scouts proceed with great caution; and as it was nearly time to halt for the night, they were expecting every moment to see the smoke from the Indians' camp-fire. After proceeding thus carefully along for a few miles, soon after dusk, they discovered the camp-fire, and, as they supposed, the Indians lying around it. This was at the mouth of what is now known as Whiteman's Fork of Aaron's Fork. It was agreed that the scouts should then take their positions, and wait till it was light enough to "draw a bead" with certainty, when, at a given signal, all were to fire. It had been ascertained, from the tracks, that the party consisted of two grown men and a boy, and it was for this reason further arranged that two of the scouts, Morris and Aaron, should fire at the largest Indian, while two were designated to fire on the smaller Indian man, and the other two should fire on the boy. They waited patiently till the first symptoms of day appeared in the eastern sky, when their impatience began to grow with the increasing light, and their eyes glanced again and again along their rifle barrels to see if the "bead" appeared through the hind-sight distinctly enough to warrant the signal to fire. While it was yet too dark to fire with any degree of certainty, the boy struggled to a sitting position, and in doing so, waked one of the others. This decided the scouts to fire at once, with the best aim they could take under the circumstances. They fired, and, as quickly as they could thereafter, rushed upon the camp with tomahawks raised, and found there but two persons—one man and a boy. The man was killed

—the boy had not received any wound from the six guns that had been discharged. He proved to be a white boy and a prisoner, and from him they learned that the man whom they had killed, was a white man painted.

#### THE BOY'S STORY.

“We lived near the Big Levels of Greenbrier; my father's name was William Griffith, and my name is John. This white man wanted to marry my sister, but he was a bad man, and my father, mother, and sister ordered him to leave our house. He became enraged, but being afraid to undertake to avenge the insult alone, he took the big Indian with him, in the night, and killed and scalped my father, mother, and sister, took me prisoner, and burnt our house. They brought me across Gauley river, up a creek, and over mountains, and after tying me to a sapling, they went, as the white man told me, to the settlement at Kelly's creek, to steal horses. I remained alone in the woods for one night and the greater part of two days, during which time there fell a heavy rain, which moistened and softened the raw-hide thongs with which I had been tied, so that, by my constant exertions, the knots slipped and set me free. This enabled me to climb out of the reach of the wolves that were howling around me; which was my chief object. I made no effort to escape, because I knew no place to which I could go, and felt safer with my captors than I would have felt alone in the wilderness, with panthers, bears, and wolves howling around me. Finding me, upon their return, in the sapling to which they had tied me, they punished me severely for getting loose. When they returned they brought with them several horses. Among the number was a little spotted pony named ‘Dick,’ that belonged to old William Morris. As soon as I saw the pony I recognized him, and for the first time since leaving home realized where we were. They also brought with them quite a supply of peaches, apples, and vegetables which they had stolen from the gardens in the neighborhood of Paint creek. I suffered intensely from an army of gnats that attacked me while I was tied in the woods. I shall never forget how vigorously

they preyed upon my face, hands, and feet, and I was powerless to even brush them off."

The boy said that the Indian had never remained at the same fire with them, but had always slept apart. They tracked him to the place where he had slept, but did not find him in his "little bed;" and, from the length of the strides that he had made toward his wigwam, on hearing the report of the rifles, it was considered useless to follow him further. The boy returned with the men who rescued him, and afterwards identified the bush to which he had been tied, on the top of the mountain opposite the mouth of Paint creek.

#### STRANGE CREEK.

About the year 1790 a surveying party came from what is now Upshur county; to Elk and Holly rivers, for the purpose of making a survey, which is now known as the Budd Survey. Among their number was a man by the name of William Strange. Old Jerry Carpenter, who was the first adventurer in the upper Elk region, was employed to conduct the party. The lower line of the survey was to begin with the left-hand fork of Holly river, about six miles above its junction with main Holly river; thence in a south-westerly direction, crossing the mountain, to main Holly; thence over another mountain to Elk river, to a point near Carpenter's settlement. At that day there was no settlement in that section except Carpenter's, and they were obliged to carry their provisions and cooking utensils on a pack-horse. Mr. Strange was a very indifferent woodsman, and to him was assigned the duty of taking the pack-horse from one camping-place to another. He was directed by the party to take the pack-horse down the path on the left-hand fork to its mouth, then up main Holly river to a certain creek, where they met him the first night. They then directed him to go down Holly to its junction with Elk river, then up Elk to Carpenter's settlement, where they would meet him the second night. The path down Holly was on the left-hand side. About a-half or three-quarters of a mile above its mouth the path forked, one path crossing the river and going up Elk, the other passing on down Holly for a short distance, and then bearing off to the right, ascending

the mountain, passing through a long chestnut flat, and striking Elk some miles below. Owing to the dense growth of timber on his left, Strange, while passing by the ford on Holly, took the right-hand path, and failed to discover the junction of the rivers. A short distance below the junction, Elk came in view, and still believing it to be the Holly, he abandoned the path and attempted to follow the river shore. After having gone a short distance, he was unable to proceed further in consequence of impassable narrows, and was forced to retrace his steps to the path, which he followed down to the chestnut flat, where he became utterly confused, and tied his horse to a bush.

The surveying party reached Carpenter's settlement that night, and as Strange's non-arrival created uneasiness among a portion of the party, Carpenter immediately explained the mystery by stating that he had evidently been misled on account of their failure to inform him where he would have to cross the river. Early next morning they started in search of him, crossed Holly, and followed the tracks of the horse until they found it tied to the bush before mentioned. Strange had wandered away from the horse, and while Carpenter was endeavoring to discover his trail one of the party fired his gun to let Strange know that they were near him. Carpenter reprimanded the party, and warned them against a repetition of the act; telling them that Strange, in his bewildered condition, would take to flight, believing them to be Indians. After searching for some time, a few miles distant they found where he had been lying in the brush, and from the direction he had taken, he had evidently fled at the noise of the gun, as suggested by Mr. Carpenter, who was an experienced and adroit Indian hunter. They followed his trail for perhaps five or six miles below, where, in the wildness of the forest, they lost all traces of him.

Nothing was heard of Mr. Strange for a number of years, when there was found, about forty miles below, on a branch of Elk, the bones of a man at the foot of a beech tree. The name of Strange and the following couplet had been cut in the bark of the tree :

"Strange is my name, and I'm on strange ground,  
And strange it is that I can't be found."

This branch, before that time known as Turkey creek, from this incident, has ever since borne the name of Strange creek. It is a few miles below Birch river, and is now the location of the Elk River Iron Works, in the county of Braxton, seventy miles from Charleston.

It is also stated that the rifle of Mr Strange, with his shot-pouch hanging on its ramrod, was found leaning against the tree at the root of which his bones were lying.

I must conclude, from this remarkable circumstance, that "Strange creek" was well and appropriately named.

#### MASSACRE OF HENRY MORRIS' DAUGHTERS.

Henry Morris lived on Peter's creek, in what is now Nicholas county. He was a daring man, and settled in that locality against the wishes of his brothers and friends. They told him that it was unsafe to locate so far away from a fort ; that a band of Indians would, some day, fall upon his family unawares, and massacre them according to their brutal custom. Morris paid no attention to their expostulations, for, although a very small man in stature, he was fearless, and flinched from naught that walked or crawled upon the earth.

John Young, a celebrated hunter and trapper, accompanied Mr. Morris to Peter's creek. They spent the greater portion of their time in hunting\* and trapping in the vicinity of their cabin; for they were cautious not to go far from home, because the country was infested with Indians. They were very successful in trapping, as the Peter's creek valley was full, so to speak, of otters, beavers, musk-rats and foxes,—producing the very best of fur.

About sunset, one summer afternoon, two girls, daughters of Henry Morris, were sent down the road a few hundred yards from their cabin, to drive up the calves. They had not gone out of sight of the house before they were seized by Indians, who had been concealed in a fence corner, and were tomahawked and scalped. Their screams were heard, and Morris and Young caught up their rifles and ran as rapidly as they could to their relief. But they were too late ; the Indians had scalped them both ; and one was dead and the other dying when they arrived at

the spot. The dying girl exclaimed: "Father, I am killed!" and expired in his arms as he bore her to the house. The dead bodies were then wrapped in sheets taken from the beds, and immediately buried on the banks of Peter's creek.

The remainder of the family packed their movable furniture and started at once for the fort at Kelly's creek, where they arrived next morning, before the dawn of day.

Mr. Morris sadly lamented the untimely death of his two daughters, and registered a vow that he would kill every Indian who might thereafter come in his way. This resolution gave the settlers much trouble, for on several occasions it was with difficulty that they prevented him from murdering peaceable Indians who came into the settlement under flags of truce.

#### NARROW ESCAPE OF WILLIAM CARROLL.

The Carrolls came to Kanawha shortly after the Morrises, and settled in the same neighborhood. William Carroll located four miles below the mouth of Kelly's creek, cleared several acres of bottom land, and built a small round-log cabin on the bank of the river.

In the spring of 1789, Mr. Carroll, while on his way to the village of Charleston, or Clendennin's settlement, as it was called at that time, was surprised by a body of Indians, who were concealed in the paw-paw bushes near the roadside. He discovered their presence before they had an opportunity to fire, and leaped from his horse. As he was dismounting two of the Indians fired upon him, and the balls from both rifles took effect in the horse, killing it instantly. Carroll ran, with all possible speed towards the river, which was fully three hundred yards distant, and the Indians were in close pursuit. The bottom was covered with large trees, which prevented the Indians from shooting him as they ran. He reached the river, perhaps a hundred yards in advance of his pursuers, and being a good swimmer, leaped into the stream, and struck out for the opposite shore. He evaded the shots from the rifles of the savages by diving every few moments, until he reached the other side. After getting on land he ran along the bank of the river to the Paint creek settlement, a distance of about ten miles, and thus made his escape.

The Indians went to his house, plundered it, set it on fire, killed his milch cow, and left the settlement. Fortunately Mr. Carroll had taken the precaution to send his family to the Kelly's creek fort the morning he left for Charleston, so that none of them were harmed by the savages.

## MASSACRE OF THE WHEELERS.

John Wheeler and family came to the Kanawha Valley about 1790 or '91, and remained for a year or two at the Kelly's creek settlement. He decided to move further westward, and accordingly came down the Valley to a point a short distance below where Col. William Dickinson now resides, fourteen miles above Charleston, where he built a log cabin and cleared a field of ground.

The summer passed without disturbance, but the fall brought with it a band of lurking Indians, who did much damage to all of the frontier settlements. One night, as Wheeler and his family were sitting in the yard roasting chestnuts in a fire, which was blazing brightly, they were fired upon by Indians, and all were killed but one, "Nat," who ran into the darkness and made his escape to the Kelly's creek fort.

The Indians scalped all their victims—husband, wife and three children—and piled their bodies in the cabin, which they then burned to ashes. When the hunters came down the next day, they found nothing but the charred remains of five unrecognizable bodies, piled in a heap. They buried them in an extemporized grave, and returned to the settlement, which they closely guarded during the remainder of the year.

## MURDER OF JAMES STATEN.

Shortly after the beginning of the present century James Staten, Leonard Morris, Billy Morris, John Young, and John Jones came to Charleston to attend Court. After remaining for several days and finishing the business that had brought them to the county-seat, they started to their homes, which were in the vicinity of the Falls of Kanawha. Late in the afternoon, as they were crossing a small branch, immediately below the village of Cannelton, they were fired upon by a squad of



Indians in ambush. Staten alone was killed, but two or three of the others were slightly wounded, and, letting their horses out to the top of their speed, made their escape. This branch was, from this circumstance, called "Staten's Run."

#### HALE'S SPRING.

Directly opposite the residence of Mr. C. C. Lewis, in Charleston, three squares above the Hale House, on the south side of the Kanawha river, is a small branch called "Hale's branch," and near its mouth is a never-failing spring of pure fresh water, which goes by the name of "Hale's Spring," with which is connected the following tradition :

In 1788 or '89 a man by the name of Hale came into this section, and was employed by George Clendennin as an ordinary laborer. He was comparatively young in years, and was an adroit and successful woodsman and hunter. He was a "dead shot." Whenever his rifle "spoke" an Indian, or a deer, or any species of game upon which he might have drawn "a bead," would always, as the hunters say, "bite the dust."

One summer's day, after Mr. Clendennin's house servant had completed a churning of butter, she was about to cross the Kanawha for the purpose of washing the butter at the spring immediately opposite the fort, when Mr. Hale informed her that it was not safe for her to go, as he had, on the day previous, seen several Indians prowling around the hills above the spring. Whereupon Mr. Hale and another man, whose name has been lost in the passing years, volunteered to take two "pails" (buckets), and bring them back filled with water for the purpose stated. They took their rifles, got into their canoe, crossed the Kanawha, and filled their buckets. As they were returning they were fired upon by a party of three Indian warriors, who had concealed themselves behind a cluster of trees on the hill-side near the spring. Mr. Hale was shot through the head and instantly killed, but the other party leaped into the river, and by diving and other serpentine movements, managed to evade the bullets of the Indians, which whistled harmlessly about him; and in less time than it takes to describe the exploit, he was safely en-

consented within the walls of Clendennin's fort. From that time the name of Hale has been attached to both the branch and spring.

Mr. Hale's remains were buried on the top of the river bank, about one hundred yards west of the residence of Mrs. James H. Fry. No marble slab marks his resting place, but his name and bravery will be remembered and admired by generations yet unborn.

#### PAINT CREEK.

With the name of every creek within the county, there is connected some kind of a tradition. Some of these are interesting and worthy of note, while others are of no special interest to the general reader. For example, take "Granny's branch" and "Potato creek" on Elk. The former obtained its name from "Granny Porter," and the latter because of its adaptibility to potato culture. On Pocatalico river we find "Coon creek," "Frog's creek," "Turkey creek," "Bear branch," and the like, each named from some circumstance peculiar to the vicinity of the creek. But I am digressing.

Paint creek is the largest and longest creek in the county. It might, with propriety, be called a river. It rises in the mountains of Raleigh county, runs south-west, and empties into the Great Kanawha twenty-three miles above Charleston. It has a fall of several feet to the mile, and during the spring and fall rains it grows "wild," as the settlers are pleased to call the freshets. There is very little farming land along this creek, it being valuable only for its coal and timber.

Before the James River and Kanawha Turnpike was constructed, the old trail of the Indians and early settlers, from Lewisburg to the Ohio river, ran along the ridges at the heads of all of the tributaries of the Great Kanawha. This, of course, was nothing more than a mere pass-way, which was used by footmen, although a person could ride on horse-back over the greater portion of it. It was a path through a wilderness, and yet, in the early history of the county, there was considerable travel over this "highway." This public thoroughfare crossed Paint creek near its source, where there was a few acres of smooth, level land, covered with large oak and beech trees. One day as Stephen Teays, Lewis

Tackett, and John Morris were returning from Lewisburg, whither they had gone to procure a fresh supply of ammunition, on coming down the eastern hill-side into this thicket of heavy timber, they observed that a number of the largest trees had been stripped of their bark and the trunks painted a bright red color, which was done from using the soft, red limestone rocks, called by the old citizens, "paint rocks." The supposition was that the Indians were the "painters;" and from that time the stream took the name of *Paint Creek*, which it will most likely retain as long as the Kanawha Valley continues to be the abode of our race.

#### BELL CREEK TRADITION.

The first settlement in the central portion of the Kanawha Valley, as stated in a previous chapter, was made at Kelly's creek. From this point improvements extended up and down the river. It was a custom among the early settlers to put bells on their cows, that they might be the better enabled to find them as they ranged in the woods. Sometimes their milch cows would wander several miles away, and would never return, unless brought back by the hunters or their children.

Bell creek is a tributary of the Gauley river, and runs almost parallel with a portion of the upper Kanawha river, the distance being only a few miles across the mountains from one valley to the other. The cows of the settlers would work their way across these mountains, and were usually found in the Bell creek valley nearly every evening. The Indians very soon learned these facts, and fell upon a plan to decoy the settlers, and thereby take their lives. They killed the cows, removed the bells from their necks, and fastened them to the swinging limbs of the trees, then concealed themselves and awaited the approach of the hunters. The gentle blowing of the wind would produce a rustling among the branches of the trees, causing the bells to ring with a motion not unlike that of the cows while grazing; and of course the hunter would approach the place whence came the sound of the bells, and would be shot down by the unerring aim of the Indian marksman. By this Indian trickery a number of white settlers were slain. Hence the name—"Bell creek."

## THE INDIAN CREEK TRADITION.

Seven and a-half miles from its mouth, there empties into Elk river a stream called Indian creek, which derived its name from the following circumstance :

Leonard Cooper and William Porter were the first settlers on the lower section of Elk river. They both were original characters, and were men of influence in their day and generation. The former located on the long bottom five miles up Elk river, then called "Cooper's Bottom," now owned by Thomas Jarvis. Mr. Porter settled on the north side of the river, immediately above the island which now bears his name—"Porter's Island."

These two pioneers were bosom friends, and spent much of their time together. They seldom left their clearings singly. This may be accounted for from the fact that the Indians were almost constantly prowling about the neighborhood, and it was unsafe to venture in the woods alone. Even while together they made many hair-breadth escapes, which have been vaguely handed down from generation to generation.

One summer's afternoon, as was their daily custom, Cooper and Porter took their rifles and started "cow-hunting." They crossed Elk at the ford above Porter's island, and kept along up the river on the south side until they came to the mouth of the creek which empties into Elk at "Gunter's Rock," and thence proceeded up said creek till they reached the flats, when they came in sight of a body of Indian horse-thieves, who had stolen, among others, the horses of the hunters. They at once realized their danger, being so much inferior to them in numbers, and returned to their settlement. The Indians, not having observed the approach of Cooper and Porter, continued with their stolen property across the country in the direction of the Great Kanawha Valley. From that time this creek has been called "Indian creek," a name it will retain, perhaps, for centuries to come.

## FLIGHT OF FLEMING COBBS.

Fleming Cobbs was among the first settlers of the county. He was a medium-sized man, but was very muscular and active. He was not only

an expert woodsman and hunter, but was a noted canoeman\* also. It was fun for him to fire into a band of Indians, and then, like Lewis Wetzel, flee for deliverance. He could run away from an ordinary Indian with perfect ease, though on several occasions he escaped—as did the patriarch Job—“by the skin of his teeth.”

About the year 1790 Mr. Cobbs was detailed to go to Point Pleasant for a fresh supply of ammunition for Clendennin's fort. Being, as above stated, an expert canoeman, he preferred to make the trip in his canoe. Accordingly he supplied himself with a sufficient quantity of food for the expedition, and with his trusty rifle took his departure for the mouth of the Kanawha, a distance of sixty miles. His reason for taking a supply of food, was that roving bands of Shawnee Indians infested that portion of the Valley between Charleston and Point Pleasant, which rendered it unsafe to attempt to kill any game. His purpose on leaving Charleston was to float down the river as cautiously as possible, so as to avoid detection by the Indians; knowing that if he were discovered on his down trip, it would be impossible to return in a canoe with any degree of safety, as the river would be carefully guarded by the Indians for the purpose of intercepting and capturing him. Cobbs, however, well understood their craftiness, and was never “caught napping.”

It was about sundown when he left Charleston, and daylight the next morning found him just above the mouth of Ten-Mile creek, only ten miles from the Point Pleasant fort; but that was the most dangerous portion of the Valley. Hence, deeming it unsafe to travel in the daytime, he ran his canoe into the mouth of the creek, and concealed it carefully under the limbs of a clump of trees which hung down to the waters' edge.

After partaking of a breakfast of cold venison, bear-meat, and turkey's breast, he spread his blanket in the bottom of his canoe, and covering himself with his hunting-shirt, in a few moments, wearied, as he was, from a hard night's work, he fell asleep. Although in the midst of

---

\*A canoe is a water craft dug out of a large poplar tree, made light and thin, and rounded to a point at either end, like a keel boat. Canoes were used altogether by the first settlers on the Kanawha for freighting purposes.

danger, he felt as if he were safe, and no dreams of stealthy Indians disturbed his slumber as he lay in his secluded bed, that October day, in the mouth of Ten-Mile. He awoke greatly refreshed, and seeing the sun far down the western sky, he knew that the shades of evening would shortly throw their mantle over the face of nature, and afford him an opportunity to complete his journey. While sitting in his canoe eating his frugal meal—dinner and supper together—he saw a band of full twenty Shawnee Indians passing up the Valley on the opposite side of the river. He knew, from the manner of their advance, that they did not suspect the presence of an enemy, as they were talking, leaping, and laughing, as hunters do when within the walls of a fort. Night came, and our hero pushed his canoe from its brushy retreat out into the stream, and renewed his descent of the river. In less than two hours he was within the walls of the fort at Point Pleasant, where he met many familiar faces, male and female, and renewed the acquaintances of former years. Here he remained until the next evening, when, with his supply of powder, lead, and flints stored away in the bow of his canoe, after an affectionate good-bye, he started up the Kanawha on his way back to Clendennin's fort.

The up-trip was much more difficult as well as dangerous. It was more difficult, because he had the current to contend with; it was more dangerous, because in using the pole or paddle it was necessary to make more or less noise, which, if heard by the savages, might result in the capture, if not in the death, of our hero.

He had not gone many miles from the fort when he was discovered by the Indians, who, of course, undertook to pursue him. He knew that he could escape if he would abandon his canoe and take to the woods; but upon reflection he decided that this was not the best course to pursue, because he could not carry his powder, lead, and flints, and the supply at Clendennin's fort would, by this time, have been fully exhausted. After satisfying himself that the Indians were only three in number, he resolved to stick to his canoe, and sell his life and ammunition as dearly as possible. He knew that the party was too small to divide and get on both sides of the river, and he felt confident that

he could keep his canoe on the opposite side from them, and thus avoid much of the danger. This was a natural and wise conclusion, and he took courage and pushed onward at the rate of six miles an hour. The Indians kept in close pursuit, and would fire whenever they could get a view of him through the heavy growth of timber which lined the banks of the river. Our hero, undaunted, used his pole the more vigorously as he neared the end of his journey. The paling of the starlight and the warbling of the birds indicated the approach of day; and with the rising of the sun he was well aware that greater perils would surround him. He hoped, however, that the width of the river would protect him from the usually unerring shot of the Indians. This was his only hope, yet it was enough to stimulate his courage, and his canoe shot forward as rapidly as if driven by the power of steam.

When the sun raised his fiery chariot above the eastern hills, and his pencilled rays of radiant light fell upon the waters of the Kanawha, our hero found himself about one mile above the mouth of Coal river, and the Indians, to his great joy, were nowhere to be seen. Upon reflection, however, he knew that they had been detained only a few moments in crossing Coal river, and that they would soon again overtake him, and renew their warfare. He kept his canoe as close to the north bank as possible, and on looking back, to his surprise, he observed two of the Indians coming up the south side of the river, while the third was about the middle of the stream, making for the other shore. For a moment his courage failed, and he felt as if all hope of escape were gone. As quick as thought he reversed his canoe, and drove it with all his power towards the swimming Indian. He must kill him; for if he should get upon the opposite side from his companions, our hero would have to surrender or be killed. The two Indians on the south bank saw the situation, and opened a vigorous fire upon Mr. Cobbs, who fortunately escaped their shots unharmed. By this time, the Indian in the river was rapidly nearing the shore. Cobbs saw that now or never was his time to shoot. Steadying himself in his canoe, he cautiously fired at the body of the savage, aiming just behind his shoulders. When the smoke and fire belched forth from the muzzle of his rifle, the Indian for a moment ceased

to swim. Cobbs knew that if he were not killed, he was at least badly wounded, and would trouble him no more; so he again reversed his canoe, and drove it with all possible speed in the direction of Clendennin's fort. The two remaining Indians, fearing that their companion had been killed, abandoned their pursuit and went to his relief. Meanwhile Cobbs lost no time in ascending the stream. At ten o'clock in the morning, he landed at Clendennin's fort, "safe and sound," though almost exhausted from excitement and overwork; having, without food or rest, poled his canoe sixty miles in fourteen hours—a feat never performed by any other person before or since.

Immediately upon Mr. Cobbs' arrival at the fort, a party of men started in pursuit of these Indians. Arriving at the place where Mr. Cobbs had fired upon the Indian, they found where his companions had taken him out of the water, and, supposing that he had been only wounded, the party returned to the fort.

#### CAPTURE OF ROBERT HUGHES.

Shortly after the Morrises settled at Kelly's creek, perhaps in the year 1776 or '77, Robert Hughes was captured by the Indians at the mouth of Paint creek. This tradition, with which all the old settlers are familiar, runs as follows:

Robert Hughes, commonly called "Bob" Hughes, settled at the mouth of the creek which now bears his name, and which empties into the Kanawha nearly opposite Paint creek. Hughes was a noted hunter and trapper, and was quite successful in fishing. He had a fish-trap at the mouth of Paint creek, which he visited every morning, and never failed to find a number of beautiful fish.

At that time only two families lived where the village of Clifton now stands; and it was considered unsafe to venture any distance from the settlement, as scarcely a day passed that Indians were not seen in the neighborhood. It was Hughes's custom to visit his traps shortly after daylight every morning. The Indians, having learned this fact, arranged for his capture. Early one morning, in company with his nephew, Mr. Hughes crossed the river in a canoe, and landed on the point below



the mouth of Paint creek. They left their guns in the canoe, and were preparing to wade into the creek to raise the trap, when a party of five Indians, who had concealed themselves behind a small mound that had been raised by a tree being blown up by the roots, rushed upon them and made them prisoners. They saw that it would be useless to make an effort to escape, and quietly yielded to their fate.

They were securely bound, and were marched up Paint creek for full thirty miles, the party keeping in the bed of the creek for the entire distance, to avoid leaving a trail, supposing of course that they would be pursued by the whites. They were followed, but on account of their having kept in the creek, it was impossible for the pursuers to ascertain the direction which they had taken, so the pursuit was abandoned.

Hughes returned in about two years, and reported that he had been taken to the head of Paint creek; thence down the ridge highway to Guyandotte; thence to Portsmouth, and from that place to the settlement on the Little Miami river. He learned to speak the Shawnee language quite fluently, and was remarkably familiar with the customs of the Indians. He took pleasure in relating his adventures while he was among the Indians, to the white settlers after his return, and it is said that his stories were very entertaining as well as instructive. He was forced on two occasions to run the gauntlet; and was saved from being burnt at the stake by the intervention of the daughter of a chief.

Mr. Hughes was a good hunter, and after he had been a prisoner for a year or more, was often sent in the woods, frequently alone, to kill camp game. While on one of these hunts, he resolved upon making his escape. He knew that if he could reach Point Pleasant, he would be safe; and accordingly he started in the direction of that fort. After a fatiguing march of four nights, laying by during the daytime, he reached the Ohio river, where he made the usual signal, was ferried over, and received into the fort. He remained at Point Pleasant for several weeks, and then made his way successfully back to his home at the mouth of Hughes's creek, eighty-three miles up the Kanawha, having been absent nearly two years.

Tradition gives no account respecting the fate of the young man who was taken prisoner along with Mr. Hughes.



DEATH OF WILLIAM WYATT.



## THE MURDER OF WILLIAM WYATT.

John Jones, who married the eldest sister of Billy Morris, Sr., owned the land where the village of Clifton now stands. There were, at the time of which I am writing—about 1780—two or three tenants living upon Mr. Jones's land, one of whom was William Wyatt, an industrious farmer. He was about thirty years of age, had a wife and one child, and was highly respected by all who knew him. He was, however, more or less superstitious, believing in dreams, witches, and evil spirits. The night before he was killed by the Indians, he dreamed he was lying in a fence-corner near the house, and was bitten in the side by a rattle-snake, from the effects of which he died. His friends tried to dissuade him that there was anything in his dream, but nevertheless he persisted in the belief that he would die or be killed on that day.

It was the season of gathering corn, and Mr. Wyatt had been at work the day before, pulling blades from a field of corn lying in the bottom immediately above the mouth of Paint creek. The morning after his dream he told his wife that he was afraid to go down into the field unless some one would go with him, since he felt sure that he would either be bitten by a rattlesnake or killed by the Indians. Accordingly, his wife volunteered to go with him and keep watch. She took her sewing along, and sat upon the fence, looking out for Indians. Noon came, and no Indians or snakes had been seen by the picket. They went to the house, ate their dinner, and shortly afterwards returned to the field; when Mr. Wyatt resumed his blade-pulling and she her sewing and watching. They had been at work only a few minutes, when Mr. Wyatt was fired upon by a band of three Indians, who had concealed themselves behind a fodder-stack in close proximity to the place in which he was working. Mrs. Wyatt ran towards the house with all possible speed, and escaped unharmed, although two shots were fired at her. The alarm was given and the Indians were pursued; but they had too great a start to be overtaken by the whites. The dead body of Mr. Wyatt was found, his scalp having been removed and carried off by the savages. With one exception, (the murder of Shadrach Harmon,) so far as I am aware, Indian hostilities were at an end, and comparative safety prevailed.

## KILLING OF SHADRACH HARMON.

About the last, if not the very last, brutal act of the Indians in the Kanawha Valley, was the murder of Shadrach Harmon. For a great many years Mr. Harmon resided within the village of Charleston, and was an industrious, enterprising citizen. Towards the close of his life he moved across the river to a little improvement which had been made near the mouth of Venable's branch, about two miles above Charleston. Here he took up his abode, and engaged in farming. He had, however, resided there only a short time when he was ambushed by the savages, and was murdered and scalped. His untimely death was sadly lamented by the citizens of Charleston, who formed themselves into an organization, and drove the murderers beyond the Ohio river.

## ANN BAILEY.

The name of Ann Bailey was for many years as familiar, in the Kanawha Valley, as a household word. She was noted for her courage, her endurance, and her virtue. She was born in England about the middle of the last century, and came to America when quite young. Her parents settled in the vicinity of Jamestown, where Ann, two brothers, and three sisters, grew up, having been educated and drilled from the cradle in the manners, customs, and hardships of frontier life. Ann, being possessed with an infatuation of back woods life, could not be persuaded to remain at home, and accordingly, at the age of nineteen, she packed her knapsack and started alone for the western frontier. After many days of laborious travel she reached Fort Union, at which place she took up her abode.

Shortly after her arrival at Lewisburg, the fort was attacked by Indians, and she displayed so much bravery and such remarkable generalship, that she was at once looked up to as a leader and commander. From that time she began backwoods life in earnest. Her public service was in the capacity of a spy; and it is said of her that if an Indian were within ten miles of the fort, she, by some strange intuition, would find it out. Besides, she could go among the Indians, talk to

hem, find out their intentions, and ascertain their numbers without difficulty or danger. She always rode a little black pony, called "Liverpool," and carried a rifle and scalping-knife as regularly as did the pioneer hunter or the dusky warrior. At first the Indians looked upon her with suspicion, and on one or two occasions attempted to disarm her, but meeting with a determined resistance, they relinquished their purpose. She learned the Shawnee language, and spoke it fluently; and she always told the savages that she was endowed by the Great Spirit with wonderful powers, and that if they interfered with her undertakings she would cause them to be swept from the face of the earth. The appearance of the woman, her earnest manner of expression, together with the proneness of the Indians to entertain almost any superstition, however ridiculous, always enabled her to carry her points.

She was very serviceable to the pioneer settlers in her capacity as *messenger*. When powder and lead were to be brought from Point Pleasant, Williamsburg, or Chillicothe, Ann Bailey was generally sent. She would mount her pony, and, accoutred with her rifle, start on her mission without fear of interruption by friend or foe. While on these excursions she killed game enough to supply her need, and would kindle her camp-fire, picket her horse, and cook her meal as composedly as if she were among her friends around their cabin fire-sides.

While traveling with ammunition, if overtaken by rain or snow, she would keep it dry by concealing it under cliffs of rocks or in hollow logs. On one occasion she was overtaken by a heavy snow-storm in the vicinity of Sewell mountain, and she crawled into a large hollow log, having first tied "Liverpool's" bridle around her ankle. A straggling Indian came along and attempted to steal her pony; feeling the movement of the bridle, she withdrew from her shelter, and observing the Indian, gave him a round abusing for his thieving propensities. The Indian, fearing that she might bring the Great Spirit's anger upon him, ran off.

In addition to her daring qualities as messenger and spy, she was a remarkable hunter. When not otherwise engaged, she always took part in the deer and bear-hunts, as regularly as any of the men; and as frequently as any of them, killed a deer off-hand, while it was running

at full speed. She asked odds of no man at running, jumping, shooting, or hunting.

After the close of the Indian wars, she settled at or near Gallipolis, Ohio, where she died, as I am informed by General George C. Bowyer, at the age of 114 years. She had a son, who lived and died near Gallipolis, also.

She was very small of stature; was round-shouldered; was fleet of foot; always dressed in black, and feared neither man nor beast. Quite a number of the citizens of Charleston, who are still living, remember her well; and all of them have for her memory the kindest words of commendation and praise. Peace be to the ashes of Ann Bailey—spy, messenger, pioneer, and hunter.

#### TACKETT'S PINE.

Lewis Tackett was among the very first settlers of the Kanawha Valley. He was a resolute, hardy frontiersman, and was dreaded by the savages. He had the courage of a Boone, and the speed of a Wetzell, and well might be feared by his enemies. As stated in a previous chapter, he constructed a fort a short distance below the mouth of Coal river, and formed a settlement at that place. Among the families who located there were John Young and Stephen Teays, both of whom were noted woodsmen, and like Tackett were dreaded by the Indians. At that time there was no settlement on the Kanawha river between Tackett's Fort and Point Pleasant, a distance of full forty-eight miles.

In 1787, one year prior to the capture of Tackett's Fort by the Shawnee Indians, Lewis Tackett and two others went down the Valley in search of game. They had not gone far before they were fired upon by seven stalwart savages. Fortunately none of them were wounded, and they fled. The two hunters who were with Mr. Tackett ran as rapidly as possible in the direction of the fort, and escaped; but Mr. Tackett was forced to flee in another direction, and was captured by the savages.

A council was held, and it was decided that they would take him to their habitations on the Scioto river, and there hold a war council and

settle his doom. Tackett believed that if he could not escape before reaching their towns he would there be put to death, as he was too well known to them to be spared as a captive. He resolved to escape at the earliest opportunity. Though the chance of succeeding was slight and disheartening, still he felt that it would be to his advantage to make a vigorous effort whenever an opportunity offered itself.

His rifle was taken from him, and his hands were closely and securely bound together with buck-skin thongs, which Indians always carried with them; whereupon they started in the direction of the Ohio river. After traveling a few miles down the Valley the party, with their prisoner, ascended the hill-side, and on arriving at the foot of a large pine which stood on the point fronting the river at "Nob Shoals," a short distance above the town of Buffalo, they tied him securely to the tree. Tackett's first impression was that they intended to burn him alive, but he soon ascertained from their conduct that such was not their purpose. After strapping him securely to the pine tree they left him alone and started back in the direction of the fort. This was his opportunity to attempt escape—this impression flashed upon his mind, as he saw them bounding down the hill-side. But how was he to loose or break the cords which bound him? He tried to get his mouth to the thongs that he might chew them in two, but in vain. He mustered all his strength, and with an almost superhuman effort tried to break the bands asunder, but to no purpose. Away down the Valley he saw dark clouds rising, which he knew to be portentous of a storm; but how could he find relief in the winds or the rain? The thunder began to roll and the lightnings to flash, and he thought of the dangers that surrounded him; yet he was powerless, and could do nothing but quietly await the fate that He who guides the storm reserved in store for him. What a pity it was that he had never learned to pray! What a comfort it would have been to have called upon the God who had made him, to deliver him from the pitiful condition in which he was placed! The storm rolled onward. The lightnings shot athwart the firmament with fearful glare, and the thunders shook the mountains seemingly to their base. The stalwart pine to which he was fastened, which had beat back the storms of many



an age, bent to and fro, as if it were a twig in the hands of a giant. The rain fell in torrents, while poor Tackett was powerless even to wipe the drenching flood from his eyes and face which was almost depriving him of breath. But he calmly bore the beatings of the storm, yet almost longed for the return of his savage captors.

Now suddenly he starts! He feels the cords that bind him loosening, and makes another effort to break them. The more he strives to liberate himself the more the wet buckskin cords stretch and grow loose, until he frees himself with perfect ease. He does not stop to look to the right or left to ascertain who, if any person, was near, but with the speed almost of the deer he bounds down the mountain-side, swims the Great Kanawha, and ere the sun arises again above that beautiful pine which had held him so securely, but for the storm, he is safe at home within his fort, enjoying the presence of his family and the congratulations of friends over his Providential deliverance.

From that time the tree to which he had been tied has been called "Tackett's Pine." It was, until recently, plainly visible from the decks of steamboats passing up and down the Kanawha river, and was for many years a landmark observed by pilots in steering through the chute at "Nob Shoals." It blew down about four years ago, and is therefore no longer to be seen.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## SIEGES OF POINT PLEASANT AND LEWISBURG.

1. Attack on Fort at Point Pleasant—Demand to Surrender—The Decline—Siege Lasts a Week—Failure of Indians, and their March Towards Donnally's Fort—Bravery of For and Hammond—Their Arrival at Lewisburg—Preparation for the Defense—Murder of Pritchett—Bravery of Dick Pointer—Defense of the Fort—Stuart and Lewis March to their Relief—Narrow Escape from an Ambuscade—They Rush to the House through Volley of Musketry—Deception of the Savages—Complete Routing of the Indians, &c., etc.

In the spring of 1778 Point Pleasant suffered a siege of a week's duration, by the Indians, and it was an oversight that an account of it had not been given in a previous chapter. I shall, however, introduce it here; and as the attack on Donnally's Fort, near Lewisburg, is so intimately connected with it, I can not desist from giving an account of it.

The following description of those engagements are from the work of the authors:

The determination of the Shawnees to revenge the death of their chief, who had hitherto been productive of no very serious consequences. While after his murder a small band of them made their appearance near the fort at Point Pleasant; and Lieutenant Moore was detached from the garrison, with some men, to drive them off. Upon advance they commenced retreating; and the officer commanding the detachment, fearing they would escape, ordered a quick pursuit. He did not proceed far before he fell into an ambuscade. He and three of his men were killed at the first fire;—the rest of the party saved themselves by a precipitate flight to the fort.

In the May following this transaction, a few Indians again came in sight of the fort. But as the garrison had been very much reduced by

the removal of Captain Arbuckle's company, and the experience of the last season had taught them prudence, Captain McKee forbore to detach any of his men in pursuit of them. Disappointed in their expectations of enticing others to destruction, as they had Lieutenant Moore in the winter, the Indians suddenly rose from their covert, and presented an unbroken line extending from the Ohio to the Kenhawa river; and in front of the fort. A demand for the surrender of the garrison was then made; and Captain McKee asked until next morning to consider it. In the course of the night the men were busily employed in bringing water from the river, expecting that the Indians would continue before the fort for sometime.

"In the morning Captain McKee sent his answer by the grenadier squaw, (sister to Cornstalk, and who, notwithstanding the murder of her brother and nephew, was still attached to the whites, and was remaining at the fort in the capacity of interpreter,) that he could not comply with their demand. The Indians immediately began the attack, and for one week kept the garrison closely besieged. Finding, however, that they made no impression on the fort, they collected the cattle about it, and, instead of returning towards their own country with the plunder, proceeded up the Kenhawa river towards the Greenbrier settlement.

"Believing their object to be the destruction of that settlement, and knowing from their great force that they would certainly accomplish it if the inhabitants were unadvised of their approach, Captain McKee despatched two men to Col. Andrew Donnally's, (then the frontier house,) with the intelligence. These men soon came in view of the Indians; but finding that they were advancing in detached groups, and dispersed in hunting parties through the woods, they despaired of being able to pass them, and returned to the fort. Captain McKee then made an appeal to the chivalry of the garrison, and asked, 'who would risk his life to save the people of Greenbrier.' John Pryor and Philip Hammond, at once stepped forward, and replied 'we will.' They were then habited after the Indian manner, and painted in Indian style by the Grenadier Squaw, and departed on their hazardous, but noble and gen-

crous undertaking. Traveling night and day, with great rapidity, they passed the Indians at Meadow river, and arrived about sun set of that day at Donnally's fort, twenty miles farther on.

"As soon as the intelligence of the approach of the Indians was communicated by these men, Col. Donnally had the neighbors all advised of it, and in the course of the night they collected at his house. He also despatched a messenger to Capt. John Stuart, to acquaint him with the fact, and made every preparation to resist the attack and insure their safety of which his situation admitted. Pryor and Hammond told them how, by the precaution of Captain McKee, the garrison at Point Pleasant had been saved from suffering by the want of water, and advised them to lay in a plentiful supply, of that necessary article. A hogshead was accordingly filled and rolled behind the door of the kitchen, which adjoined the dwelling house.

"Early next morning, John Pritchett (a servant to Col. Donnally) went out for some fire-wood, and while thus engaged, was fired at and killed. The Indians then ran into the yard, and endeavored to force open the kitchen door; but Hammond and Dick Pointer (a negro belonging to Col. Donnally) who were the only persons within, aided by the hogshead of water, prevented their accomplishing this object. They next proceeded to cut it in pieces with their tomahawks. Hammond seeing that they would soon succeed in this way, with the assistance of Dick, rolled the hogshead to one side and letting the door suddenly fly open, killed the Indian at the threshold, and the others who were near gave way. Dick then fired among them, with a musket heavily charged with swan shot, and no doubt with effect, as the yard was crowded with the enemy; a war club with a swan shot in it, was afterward picked up near the door.

"The men in the house, who were asleep at the commencement of the attack, being awakened by the firing of Hammond and Dick, now opened a galling fire upon the Indians. Being chiefly up stairs they were enabled to do greater execution, and fired with such effect that, about one o'clock, the enemy retired a short distance from the house. Before they retired, however, some of them succeeded in getting under the floor, when they were aided by the whites inside in raising some of the puncheons of

which it was made. It was to their advantage to do this, and well did they profit by it. Several of the Indians were killed in this attempt to gain admittance, while only one of the whites received a wound, which but slightly injured his hand.

"When intelligence was conveyed to Captain Stuart of the approach of so large a body of savages, Colonel Samuel Lewis was with him ; and they both exerted themselves to save the settlement from destruction, by collecting the inhabitants at a fort where Lewisburg now stands. Having succeeded in this, they sent two men to Donnally's to learn whether the Indians had advanced that far. As they approached, the firing became distinctly audible, and they returned with the tidings. Captain Stuart and Colonel Lewis proposed marching to the relief of Donnally's fort, with as many men as were willing to accompany them ; and in a brief space of time commenced their march at the head of sixty-six men. Pursuing the most direct route, without regarding the road, they approached the house on the back side, and thus escaped an ambuscade of Indians placed near the road to intercept and cut off any assistance which might be sent from the upper settlements.

"Adjoining the yard, there was a field of well grown rye into which the relief from Lewisburg entered about two o'clock ; but as the Indians had withdrawn to a distance from the house, there was no firing heard. They soon, however, discovered the savages in the field, looking intently toward Donnally's, and it was resolved to pass them. Captain Stuart and Charles Gatliff fired at them, and the whole party rushed forward into the yard, amid a heavy discharge of balls from the savage forces. The people in the fort hearing the firing in the rear of the house soon presented themselves at the port holes, to resist, what they supposed was a fresh attack on them ; but quickly discovering the real cause, they opened the gates, and all the party led on by Stuart and Lewis safely entered.

"The Indians then resumed the attack and maintained a constant fire at the house until near dark, when one of them approached, and in broken English called out, 'we want peace.' He was told to come in and he should have it ; but he declined the invitation to enter, and they

all retreated, dragging off those of their slain who lay not too near the fort.

"Of the whites, four only were killed by the enemy. Pritchett, before the attack commenced, James Burns and Alexander Ochiltree, as they were coming to the house early in the morning, and James Graham, while in the fort. It was impossible to ascertain the entire loss of the Indians. Seventeen lay dead in the yard, and they were known to carry off others of their slain. Perhaps the disparity of the killed, equalled, if it did not exceed the disparity of the numbers engaged. There were twenty-one men at Donnally's fort before the arrival of the reinforcement under Stuart and Lewis; and the brunt of the battle was over before they came. The Indian force exceeded two hundred men.

"It was believed that the invasion of the Greenbrier country had been projected some time before it actually was made. During the preceding season an Indian, calling himself John Hollis, had been very much through the settlement and was observed to take particular notice of the different forts which he entered under the garb of friendship. He was with the Indians in the attack on Donnally's fort, and was recognized as one of those who were left dead in the yard.

"On the morning after the Indians departed Captain Hamilton went in pursuit of them with seventy men; but following two days without perceiving that he gained on them, he abandoned the chase and returned."

## CHAPTER XV.

## EARLY HISTORY OF CHARLESTON.

Charleston in 1808—Its Streets and Buildings—Public Square, Court-House and Jail—Whipping-post, Pillory and Stocks—Their Uses—The "Thirty-nine" Lashes—Execution of two Negroes, Abram and Isaac—They are Falsely Accused of Murder, and Suffer the Penalty, While the Real Culprits go Free—Description of the Gallows, and the Scene at the Execution—Bravery of Abram—He Pleads Innocence to the End—Accusations Against his Companion Peter—The Sheriff Removes the "Platform"—Last of Abram and Isaac—First Methodist Minister in the Kanawha Valley—Extent of his Circuit—Anecdote of Bishop Morris—Personal Incidents of Rev. Asa Shinn—First Methodist Class—"Billy" Morris—Anecdote of Him While a Member of the Virginia Legislature—Anecdote of Volney the French Infidel—Want of Persons Authorized to Celebrate the Rite of Matrimony—Amusing Weddings—Privations of Early Settlers—Kanawha Salines—Boring for Salt Water—Annual Elections—Kidnapping of Jack Neale—He Murders the Slave-dealer—His Arrest, Imprisonment, and Trial—His Sentence and Reprieve—His Subsequent Troubles—Rev. Dr. Ruffner—Personal Incidents, etc., etc.

I have been peculiarly fortunate recently in procuring from a friend, Prof. W. G. Williams, LL. D., of Delaware, Ohio, scraps of early history of the Kanawha Valley, written by his father, Mr. Samuel Williams, who resided in Charleston from 1803 to 1810. This history was published in the *Ladies' Repository*, at Cincinnati, in the years 1851, '52, '53, '54, entitled "Leaves from a Portfolio." It may be relied upon as strictly correct.

Mr. Williams thus speaks of Charleston :

"Charleston was at this time—1803—an inconsiderable village, with a population of about one hundred and fifty souls. The houses were mostly constructed of hewn logs, with a few frame buildings, and, in the background, some small round-log cabins. The principal, or Front street, some sixty feet in width, was laid out on the beautiful bluff bank of the Kanawha river, which has an elevation of thirty or forty feet above low water. On the sloping bank between this street and the river, there were then no houses nor structures of any kind, as it was considered the common

roperty of the town. On this street, of half a mile in length, stood out two-thirds of the houses composing the village. On another street, running parallel to this, and at a distance of some four hundred feet from it, and only opened in part, there were a few houses. The remainder lay upon cross streets, flanking the public square. The houses were constructed in plain, 'back-woods' style; and, to the best of my recollection, the painter's brush had not passed upon any of them. The streets remained in their primitive state of nature, except that the timber had been cut off by the proprietor, who had originally cultivated the ground as a corn-field. But the sloping bank of the river, in front of the village, was still covered with large sycamore trees and paw-paw bushes. Immediately in the rear of the village lay an unbroken and dense forest of large and lofty beech, sugar, ash, and poplar timber, with thickets of paw-paw. Above, and adjoining it, lay the beautiful farms of the Ruffner family, extending, in succession, three or four miles up the river, and covering the rich alluvial bottom. About a mile in the rear of the village, and near the base of the hills bounding the Valley, lay the farm and pleasant mansion of Colonel John Reynolds, the proprietor, I believe, of the village. Below, at the distance of a quarter of a mile, the Elk river, flowing in at right angles, united its placid waters with those of the Kanawha. The space between the Elk river and the village was covered with a heavy growth of sycamore trees, and with paw-paw thickets.

"The public square was near the center of the village, without any inclosure, and extended from Front to Second street. The court-house was a small one-story frame building, not painted, and stood some forty feet back from Front street. The court-room was fitted up in the plainest style. The Judges' bench was placed upon a platform, four feet high, and extended across one entire end of the court-house. This was necessary, as there were sometimes fifteen or more Judges on the bench at once—every Magistrate in the county being a Judge. A few feet south of the court-house, and standing some thirty feet farther from the street, was the county jail, constructed of square logs, notched down, and laid closely together. In it were two cells, occupying half the building, and



separated from the other half and from each other by square log walls, and covered and floored with the same material. The walls, floors, and ceilings of both were lined with two-inch oak planks, spiked firmly to the logs. One of these cells was for debtors, the other for criminals. The latter was badly ventilated, having neither light nor air, except what was admitted through a very small window and the grating of the iron door, which opened into a narrow hall, separating the cells from the jailor's apartment. This consisted of two small rooms—one of which was kitchen, dining, and sitting-room for the jailor and his family, the other their sleeping-room.

#### WHIPPING POST.

“In front of the jail, near the south end of the court-house, and ranging with the front thereof, in full view from the street and the adjacent dwellings, stood conspicuously those ornaments of a refined and enlightened age—the *whipping-post*, *pillory*, and *stocks*. As few, perhaps, of our readers have ever gazed upon these interesting relics of antiquity, I will, for their edification describe those above mentioned.

“A section of the trunk of an oak tree, hewed and dressed off octagonally, some sixteen inches in diameter, was set perpendicularly and firmly in the ground, and standing fifteen feet or more above the surface. This was the ‘whipping-post.’ Around it was erected a platform of boards, laid upon timbers, elevated twelve inches from the ground, and being ten feet square, having the whipping-post in the center. Just above the platform, a vertical slit, of two and a half inches wide and twenty inches high, was mortised through the center of the post. Through this slit were passed two oak boards ten feet long, eight inches wide, and two inches thick; the edge of the upper one resting upon the edge of the lower, both jointed to fit close together, and the lower board being made fast. Through these boards, at the joint, were cut or bored four holes, about the diameter of three inches, one-half of each being cut in the lower board, and the other half in the upper—two on each side of the post, and about fifteen inches apart. These boards were the ‘stocks.’ About eight feet above this platform was erected another of like dimen-

sions, laid upon timbers mortised through the post. At the distance of some three feet above this latter platform, another slit, of two and a half inches wide and two feet long, was cut through the post. Into this slit was fitted two boards, exactly corresponding with those above described. Through these boards, at the joint, were cut three holes on each side of the post. The central hole of each set of the three was large enough to receive the neck of a man, and the other two, each twelve inches from this were of a diameter corresponding to that of a man's wrists. This platform and pair of boards constituted the 'pillory.'

"The practical uses to which these ingenious instruments of justice were applied, I shall now describe. When a prisoner, for some offense, was sentenced by the Court, or by a justice of the peace, to receive 'thirty-nine lashes,' more or less, 'on his bare back,' he was forthwith brought to the 'whipping-post,' his body stripped to the waist, his arms drawn closely around the post, and bound firmly together at the wrists, to prevent his moving. In this humiliating position, the culprit receives, upon his naked back, at the hands of the Sheriff or some other officer of the law, the prescribed number of stripes, 'well laid on,' with a heavy 'cow-hide,' every lash parting the skin, while the blood trickles down his lacerated back.

"In the punishment of 'the stocks,' the evil-doer who was sentenced to this mode of expiation was seated upon the lower platform at the whipping-post, the upper of the two oak boards, before described, raised up, the prisoner's feet passed between the boards, with his legs, just above the ankles, placed in two adjacent holes, while the upper board is placed down upon his legs, and keyed fast with a wedge driven into the slit over it. In this posture the prisoner sits the length of time specified in his sentence.

"When a transgressor of the law, 'In such cases made and provided,' is condemned to stand in the 'pillory,' he is made to ascend by a ladder to the upper platform, where the upper board is raised so as to admit his head through one of the larger central holes, and his hands through the smaller ones on each side of it. On being thus placed,

the upper board is let down upon his neck and wrists, and keyed fast by a wedge. In this unpleasant 'fix,' the distinguished individual who has thus suddenly 'got up in the world' is not unfrequently greeted by those below with rotten eggs, or other missiles, thrown in his face. Here he remains, *volens volens*, until he has 'served out' his time."

#### EXECUTION OF TWO NEGROES.

Soon after his arrival at Charleston, Mr. Williams learned that two negro men were then confined in the dungeon of the county jail, under sentence of death for the murder of a slave-dealer, who was taking them to a Southern market for sale; and, feeling concerned for their spiritual welfare, he sought an interview with them, to impart religious instruction, if need be. But he was not permitted by the Sheriff to enter their dark and gloomy cell, and could, therefore, only converse with them through the grated iron door, without being able to see them.

As an item in the early history of such doings in the South, I make up, from the written narrative of Mr. Williams, the following condensed account of the case:

"These two colored men—Abram and Isaac—with a number of others, had been bought up in Maryland by a slave-dealer, in the Summer of 1803, for the Louisiana sugar plantations. As is common, in this slave traffic, husbands and wives, parents and children, brothers and sisters, kindred and friends, were torn asunder, perhaps without even the poor consolation of the last embrace, and never again permitted to see, to hear of, or from each other! Having made up his complement of slaves, this dealer in human flesh had them collected at a depot, hand-cuffed and chained together, in double file, to a strong chain passing along between each pair of them. The forward end of this chain was attached to the hinder part of the provision wagon, and in this manner they were marched in the middle of the road, like cattle, through dust and mud, through rain or sunshine, and obliged to endure

‘The peltings of the pitiless storm,’

and sleep, perhaps, in the open air, still chained together. On reaching

the Ohio river, they were put on board of a flat-bottomed boat, in which they descended the river, toward the 'Sunny South.'

"Somewhere on the route, they had been furnished with a file or two, by some person, with which, when the driver was asleep, they filed the rivets of their handcuffs so nearly off, that at a favorable opportunity, they could complete their work, and free themselves. In connection with this plan, the death of the slave-dealer was determined on by two or three of the gang. Abram, who was a stout, athletic man, was applied to by the conspirators, to join in the plot, but promptly refused, and tried to dissuade them from it. At the mouth of the Kanawha river, where the boat was anchored for the night in the Ohio, the favorable time seemed to have occurred. Quietly and noiselessly, the conspirators completed cutting off their handcuffs. They then quickly dispatched the slave-dealer, and liberating their companions in bondage, they cut the boat loose, and pushed it to the opposite bank, and landing on the soil of Ohio, a short distance above Gallipolis, they set off into the country, in the hope of making their escape. But the alarm was soon given, and a posse raised at Gallipolis, and set out in pursuit of the fugitives, who were overtaken and brought back. As the crime was committed within the jurisdiction of Virginia, they were taken into Kanawha county, where a Court of examination was held by justices of the peace. The murderers now became alarmed, knowing the fate which awaited them. They knew that Abram was awake when the murder was committed, and witnessed the deed, and they feared his testimony. Isaac, although one of the conspirators, shrunk back from the scene, and left the perpetration of the deed to his companions; and they feared that his testimony would also be brought against them. They saw that their only hope of escape would be to accuse Abram and Isaac of the murder, and to unite in their testimony against these two, as the only guilty persons. Accordingly, they concerted together for this purpose, and took the earliest opportunity to give information against these two men to accuse them of the murder. The plan succeeded. Abram and Isaac, when arraigned before the Court, were found guilty, upon the testimony of the conspirators, and sentenced to be hung.

"Abram, who was about thirty-five years old, informed Williams that he had been, for many years, a professor of religion, and a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church; and that he had a wife and seven children in Maryland, whom, at his sale, he was not permitted to see. He constantly protested his innocence of the murder, and declared that the very men on whose false testimony he had been convicted, were themselves the murderers.. Williams visited him almost daily, to converse with and comfort him, and was gratified to find him, though 'sorrowful, yet always rejoicing.' The support of Divine grace and the consolations of the Holy Spirit seemed now to buoy up his soul, in the near prospect of the violent death which awaited him. The other prisoner, a young man, was, for a long time, impenitent, and refused to converse on the subject of his soul's salvation; but, by the earnest exhortations of his pious fellow-prisoner, joined with those of young Williams, he, at length, 'thought on his ways,' was thoroughly awakened, and 'fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before' him. His convictions were deep and pungent, and his penitence manifestly sincere, and resulted in his hopeful conversion.

"At the appointed time—a cold wintry day in December, 1803—the fetters of these two unfortunate men were knocked off, and they were led out for execution. They were clad in the same thin garments which they had worn during the Summer, and which had probably not been changed since the sentence of death had been passed upon them. On coming out of their cell, young Williams, who now saw them for the first time, spoke to them. Recognizing his well-known voice, they seemed glad to see him; and grasping his hand, with many thanks for his alleged kindness in visiting them and administering to their spiritual comfort, they bade him an affecting farewell. Seated in a cart, they were drawn to the place of execution. On the way thither, Abram, in a clear, strong, and very musical voice, sang that beautiful hymn,

'And let this feeble body fail,' etc.

The appropriateness of most of the hymn, the melody of his fine voice, the sweetness of his tones, and the fervent, devotional feeling with which it was sung, brought tears from many eyes; and the sympathy mani-

fested on the occasion was doubtless heightened by the general impression which prevailed, that this man—the victim of a cruel conspiracy—was about to die an ignominious death for a crime of which he was wholly innocent.

“The gallows was of the rudest construction, and was erected in the woods a quarter of a mile in the rear of the village. A stout pole, cut from a sapling, was placed against two trees standing some fifteen feet apart, and raised on forks cut from other saplings, to the height of about twelve feet from the ground, where it was securely propped. Under this pole the cart containing the prisoners was driven. There were present, to witness the execution, some three hundred persons. The Sheriff now informed the prisoners that if they had anything to say to the audience, they were at liberty to speak. Abram then arose, and delivered a calm and sensible address of about twenty minutes. He gave a brief account of his life, of his religious experience, of the occurrences subsequent to his sale to the slave-dealer, and the circumstances relating to the murder, solemnly declaring his innocence of any participation in it. He spoke feelingly of his affectionate wife and children, from whom he had been cruelly separated forever, without even the privilege of bidding them adieu. During the delivery of the address, one of the perjured witnesses, upon whose false testimony Abram had been condemned, was looking out from behind a tree, at the outskirts of the crowd, which he expected to screen him from the observation of the speaker, whom he had not the courage to face. But the keen eye of Abram detected him, and he called him by name :

“ ‘ Peter ! ’ said he, in a voice a little elevated, and pointing to him— ‘ Peter, stand out, that I may see you ; for I have somewhat to say to you. *You know*, Peter, that with your own hand you assisted in the murder, and that I had counselled you against it. *You know* that I had nothing to do in it, and am entirely innocent of the crime, or of any consent to it. And yet, Peter, you have deliberately and falsely sworn that *I* was the murderer ; and by your false testimony, I am now about to suffer a shameful death, which, but for your perjury, would have fallen upon you ! O, Peter ! I shudder at the thought of the fearful reckoning

which awaits you at the bar of God ! There will be no hiding behind the trees there—no escaping by false swearing ! I call upon you, now, in the presence of this solemn assembly—in the presence of that God to whose bar, in a few minutes, I shall be called myself—to think seriously of the terrible and double crime you have committed ! And I warn you now, of that fearful retribution—that dreadful and ‘everlasting destruction which awaits you, if you repent not.’

“During the delivery of that pointed address to himself, Peter stood terrified, and looked as if he would have fallen to the ground, but for the support of the tree against which he leaned. Abram closed his address with an appropriate exhortation to the audience, and by expressing his confident and joyful hope of everlasting life. Isaac spoke, in a low voice, about three minutes ; but expressed a firm trust in the mercy of God, through the atonement of Christ, and his blessed hope of heaven. No clergyman was present to attend and render the appropriate services to these poor criminals, in their last moments. Indeed, it is not recollected that there was one clergyman resident or laboring in the county at that time.

“The Sheriff now ascended the cart, to perform his last office to the criminals. After adjusting the ropes around their necks, the other ends thereof were thrown over the pole, and made fast to it, and the caps drawn over their faces ; after which the Sheriff told them that they were allowed five minutes for silent prayer, and to commend their souls to their Creator. At the signal given by him, the cart, in which the criminals stood, was driven from under them, and they were launched into eternity. Their bodies were cut down about half an hour afterward, and immediately tumbled, together, into a grave which had been dug for the purpose near the gallows.

“Sickened at heart by the appalling scene, Mr. Williams turned away from it, in a tumult of most painful feelings, and indulging in no very pleasant reflections upon ‘man’s inhumanity to man.’ This was the first—the only—execution he ever witnessed ; for, as he left the ground, he firmly resolved that he would never again look upon another such scene. Many of the States have, of late years, prohibited by law the public

n of condemned criminals; and I hope that, ere long, all the this Union will enact similar legal prohibitions."

## RELIGIOUS HISTORY OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

Villiams and her eldest son, from whose autobiography I copy, first Methodists who settled in the Kanawha Valley. Of the origin of Methodism and the formation of the first Society there, their means, I propose now to give some account, to preserve the memory of Church history from the oblivion in which it would soon be lost.

Immediately after settling in Charleston, Mrs. Williams and her son inquired whether there were any Methodists in that section of country; but could hear of none. Fortunately, however, they soon afterward met two old Methodists from the banks of the Ohio river, the westernmost of the county, who, as Justices of Peace and *ex-officio* Judges of the county Court, were in attendance at the November term. These were Spurlock and Thomas Buffington—one residing at the mouth of Twelve-Pole creek, the other at the mouth of the Guyandotte river. From them they learned that the Rev. William Steel, of the Little Kanawha and Muskingum Circuit, in the Baltimore Conference, preached four weeks at the houses of each of those gentlemen; and by them they sent an invitation to Mr. Steel to visit the family of Mr. Williams and preach in Charleston. This he regarded as a providential dispensation, through inclement weather and almost impassable roads, or, perhaps, over a mountainous and uninhabited region, and crossing several streams, he arrived at the house of Mr. Williams, in Charleston, on the next day, January 1, 1804, preached to a good congregation in a room of the same building. This, so far as I am informed, was the first Methodist sermon preached in the Kanawha Valley. Mr. Williams now took Charleston into his circuit, and it was thenceforward a circuit with preaching regularly every four weeks. The circuit then embraced a large territory on both sides of the Ohio river, embracing the mouth of the Kanawha on the Muskingum and Little Kanawha rivers, and down to the mouth of Twelve-Pole creek. It was a four-weeks' cir-



cuit, with but one preacher, who had long and fatiguing rides from one appointment to another, often without roads, and mostly through a wilderness of unbroken forests. The territory then included in the circuit, with adjacent, unoccupied regions, now embraces considerable portions of two Conferences, five districts, and more than forty circuits and stations. 'So mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed.' Mr. Steele closed his labors on the circuit the following Spring, prior to the session of the Baltimore Conference, and returned no more to the West.

"The Little Kanawha and Muskingum circuit was this year—1804—divided, and a new one formed out of the lower part, called Guyandotte Circuit, which was attached to the Western Conference, and the Rev. Asa Shinn appointed thereto. He commenced his labors in June; but remained only four months, till the sitting of the Western Conference, October 2, 1804.

"Mr. Shinn had been two years in the traveling connection, which he entered at the age of twenty. Although yet very young, his preaching attracted large congregations of deeply attentive hearers, who all regretted that he was so soon called away to another field of labor. Some notice of Mr. Shinn may be interesting to those readers who are familiar with his subsequent course as an able, eloquent, and distinguished divine. He was dressed, at the time I speak of, in backwoods style—a full suit of gray-mixed domestic cotton-cloth, with a broad-brim, drab hat. His old-fashioned garb contrasted somewhat singularly with his very youthful appearance. In person he was then slender, although in after years he became fleshy and corpulent, his complexion fair, and on his cheek was the blush of health and youth. His fine intellectual face was strongly marked with an expression of gravity, seriousness, and deep thought, much beyond his years. But in conversation and in the family or social circle he was always cheerful, and his countenance lighted up with animation. His hours of reading and study suffered no interruption from the conversation and business of the family circle around him; for he could be, whenever he desired, 'midst busy multitudes alone,' entirely abstracted from all else save his books and his studies. He was a fine singer, and often entertained and edified the families where he lodged by sing-

some of the songs of Zion in strains of such rich and sweet melody often melted the listeners to tears. On the occasion of a visit at the house of Mr. John Morris—the father of Bishop Thomas A. Morris—who lived on the Kanawha river, a few miles above Charleston, Mr. Shinn, at the request of Mrs. Morris, sang a few favorite hymns. Young Thomas, then a small boy of some eight or nine years old, stood and listened at Mr. Shinn while singing, amazed and delighted with the sweet thrilling music of his silver voice, the like of which he had never heard before. This, with his affability and familiar conversation with the children, won the heart of Thomas, and impressed him with the highest respect for Mr. Shinn."

The Rev. James Quinn, in the narrative of his own labors in western Virginia, gives the following incidents of Mr. Shinn :

Some fifteen or twenty miles farther up ; (the West Fork of Monongahela river,) towards Clarksburg, a door was opened and a good society gathered at the house of Mr. J. Shinn, father of Rev. Asa Shinn. This was of Quaker origin ; but 'he believed and was baptized, and his household.' Forty years have passed since I preached and met class in good man's house. At that time (1799) Asa was seeking salvation as a broken spirit—a broken and a contrite heart. We prayed together in the woods, and I have loved him ever since. Would that he were with us yet ! This young man was admitted on trial in 1801, although he had never seen a meeting-house or a pulpit before he left his father's house to become a traveling preacher. He had only a plain English education ; yet in 1809 we find him, by appointment of the venerable Asbury, in the city of Baltimore, as colleague of another backwoods minister, R. R. Roberts, now Bishop Roberts. So much for a diligent attention to the course of theological reading and training laid down by Asbury for his preachers, and carried out by Asbury and his coadjutors.'\* The following anecdotes of Mr. Shinn were related a number of years ago, by Rev. John Collins, late of the Ohio Conference :

The first year of his itinerant labors was on the Redstone Circuit, in 1798. At one of his appointments, on his first round on the circuit, he

arrived after the congregation had assembled ; and, on entering the room and commencing his service, his curiosity was awakened by hearing the 'tick' of the old family clock, standing against the wall, and it somewhat disturbed his train of thought while preaching. But when the clock struck the hour, it nearly brought him to a stand with astonishment. After the congregation had retired, he went to the clock, and looked attentively at its face a minute or two, pondering in his mind what it could be—for he had never before seen one nor heard of them—and, turning to his host, he said, ' Brother, what do you call that thing, and what is it for ?' The good brother, as much surprised at the question as Mr. Shinn was at the ' thing,' replied, ' Why, that is a clock, and its use is to keep time.' ' Brother,' continued Mr. Shinn, ' can you open it and let me see the inside ?' ' O yes,' the brother replied ; and, taking off the top of the case, he exposed to the view of the young inquirer after knowledge the wheels and works, and also opened the clock door, and showed him the swing of the pendulum, and explained the use of the weights. Mr. Shinn examined the whole for some time, with great interest, till he fully comprehended its mechanism and its movement.

"At another time, during the same year, on entering the congregation, at one of his appointments, he saw therein two elderly Presbyterian ministers, who were attracted by the fame of the young preacher's eloquence and tact in discussing the doctrines which had been so much controverted between Calvinists and Arminians. Mr. Shinn was yet a mere stripling in years, and felt some embarrassment by the presence of the two reverend gentlemen as hearers ; and, before commencing the service, he asked each of them to preach for him ; but they both refused, saying that they came, not to preach, but to hear him. With some trepidation he commenced, and, after reading a chapter, singing, and prayer, he took for his text : ' And Elihu \* \* \* said, I am young, and ye are very old. wherefore I was afraid, and durst not shew you mine opinion. I said. Days should speak, and multitude of years should teach wisdom. But there is a spirit in man : and the inspiration of the Almighty giveth them understanding. Great men are not always wise ; neither do the aged understand judgment. Therefore I said, Hearken to me ; I also will shew

mine opinion.' Job xxxii, 6-10. The text was evidently selected after the refusal of the two clergymen to preach. After an introduction suited to the text and the occasion, he took the last clause as the foundation of his discourse, 'I also will shew mine opinion;' and, to 'stick to his text,' he proceeded, at some length, to 'shew' what, in his 'opinion,' were the true and Scriptural doctrines of redemption—free grace, repentance, faith, and holiness—defending his 'opinions,' as he advanced, against the objections of Calvinists and others, to the astonishment of the venerable clergymen, who, after the service closed, retired in silence, pleased with the eloquence and intellectual promise of the youthful divine, however much they might dissent from his opinions.

"The subsequent brilliant course of Mr. Shinn, as one of the most distinguished and eloquent divines of our country, is familiar to most of my readers. To my notice of him I shall add only the following passage from a letter in a late number of the *Boston Olive Branch*, from its editor, Rev. T. F. Norris, when recently on a visit to Brattleboro, Vt.:

"In this town is located the Vermont Lunatic Asylum, under the care of Dr. Rockwell and his excellent lady. The buildings are large, airy, and quiet, with excellent walks and pleasure grounds. Our venerable friend, Rev. Asa Shinn, is here. His great labors in the cause of Methodism, and particularly in the great controversy which established the Methodist Protestant Church, greatly exhausted him, mentally and physically, which, with subsequent labors, quite overcame him; so much so, that, for the last few years, he has been obliged to spend his time in some retreat for the insane. He has been under the care of Dr. Rockwell two or three years, and, though much prostrated, is very comfortable, and able to enjoy the visits of his friends. \* \* \* We yesterday enjoyed our visit with him much like soldiers retired from the war. We talked and fought our battles over again. Our venerable brother now is seventy years old. He commenced preaching at twenty—of course has been a minister half a hundred years. His mental and physical energies, probably, will never admit of his preaching more. \* \* \* Mr. Shinn was one of the most eloquent and mighty men the Methodist denomination has produced.'

“But to proceed with my narrative. Rev. William Pattison succeeded Mr. Shinn, being appointed to the Guyandotte Circuit, at the Western Conference, in October, 1804. Some time in the following Summer one or two of the settlers on Elk river, who had occasionally heard the Methodist preachers in Charleston, invited Mr. Pattison to preach in their neighborhood, which he did, at the house of Mr. Michael Newhouse, about four miles from Charleston.\* This house, thenceforth, became one of the regular appointments on the circuit. Mr. Pattison was followed, in November, 1805, by Rev. Abraham Amos. Some two months afterward—in January, 1806, I think—the *first Methodist Society in the Kanawha Valley* was organized. This class was formed by Mr. Amos, at Mr. Newhouse's, above mentioned. The following are the names of members then enrolled, as nearly as I can now recollect: John Slack† of Elk River Valley; Mrs. Slack, do.; Michael Newhouse, do.; Mrs. — Newhouse, do.; Keziah Newhouse; William Williams, of Charleston; Margaret Williams, do., by letter; Samuel Williams, do., by letter; with two or three other persons on Elk river, whose names are forgotten. Of this class Mr. Slack was appointed leader. Whether any of this little band, save the first and last named, are still living I am not informed.‡ At what time the first class was formed in Charleston I am unable to say, as I left the Valley in the Spring of 1807, up to which time none had been organized in that village.

This was the rise of Methodism in this great Valley. Truly, ‘small and feeble was its day;’ but we must not despise the ‘day of small things.’

“Saw ye not the cloud arise,  
Little as a human hand?  
Now it spreads along the skies—  
Hangs o'er all the thirsty land!”

#### ANECDOTES OF MORRIS AND VOLNEY.

“Up to near the close of the last century, there had been but little

---

\*Mr. Newhouse then resided upon the same farm now owned by the mother of the author—Mrs. Miriam Atkinson.

†Father of Hon. Greenbury Slack and John Slack, Sr., Esq.

‡They are all dead.

emigration to the Kanawha region, and the sparse settlements which had been formed were 'few and far between.' The lands along the river and its larger tributaries had already been mostly entered, in large tracts, under military land-warrants, issued to Revolutionary officers of the Virginia line. But few of the large proprietors resided on these lands; and having no agencies for the sale of them, the early settlers were mostly 'squatters.' These were then frontier settlements; and the country lying west of them was yet owned and occupied by the red men of the forest. But few travelers, therefore, visited or passed through these settlements, in reaching which the Alleghany range of mountains had to be passed, and an unbroken wilderness traversed. The weary traveler was sure to be hailed at almost every cabin which he passed with sundry interrogatories, as to where he was from, his destination, business, etc. And if, by his garb or appearance, he seemed to be a man of wealth, he was usually taken to be a land-holder or speculator, and underwent such additional catechising as seemed most likely to elicit from him the secret, apprehending that the stranger might be the owner or purchaser of the land on which they had 'squatted.'

"Among the earliest and most substantial settlers on the Kanawha, were several families by the name of Morris.. The most prominent of these was 'old Billy Morris'—as he was familiarly called—who resided on the river, about twenty miles above Charleston, where he owned a large and valuable plantation. Reared from his boyhood on the frontier, he had no opportunity of acquiring any education, which he much deplored. He was, however, a clear-headed, strong-minded man, and possessed great influence in the settlement, and was much esteemed. His manners and habits were those of a hardy, independent backwoodsman, unacquainted with, and untrammelled by, the artificial varnish or usages of polished life. His dress was in keeping with his mode of life, the hunting-shirt and moccasins being always a part of his costume. On the organization of Kanawha county, Mr. Morris was chosen by his fellow-citizens one of their first Representatives in the Virginia Legislature. On reaching Richmond, the seat of government, he laid aside his hunting-shirt and moccasins for a fashionable suit of broadcloth and fair-top

boots—the first time he had ever been thus arrayed. It is said, that, in the evening, when a servant laid down before him a boot-jack and pair of slippers, Mr. Morris not comprehending at once the design of such movements, a parley something like the following took place :

“ ‘What do you want, boy?’

“ ‘Your boots, massa, to black ‘em.’

“ ‘But what is that *thare* thing for?’ pointing to the boot-jack.

“ ‘To draw your boots wid, massa.’

“ Taking the jack in his hands, Mr. Morris placed the fork on the heel of one of his boots and vainly essayed to push it off his foot; while Pompey, looking on a few moments, enjoying the perplexity of the backwoods legislator, and grinning a smile that showed his double row of ivory, stepped forward to his relief.

“ ‘Dis way, massa,’ said he, gently taking the jack out of his hands and placing it on the floor before him—‘stand on it wid one foot, massa, and put t’oder keel in here, while I hold on by de toe, and den pull your foot out.’

“ One day, while the House was in session, Mr. Morris received, at his seat, a note containing a polite invitation from the Governor, to dine with him. He opened the note, and looked over it as if reading its contents, although he could neither read nor write; then dashing it down on the floor, and stamping on it, exclaimed in a tone somewhat excited, and loud enough to be heard by the members in the quarter of the house where he sat, ‘I’ll support no such law!’ A member who sat near him picked up the note and read it; and surprised at the reception it had received from the gentleman from Kanawha, said to him, ‘Why, Mr. Morris, you are mistaken! This is an invitation from the Governor to dine with him to-morrow.’ ‘Is it!’ exclaimed Mr. Morris, feeling in his pockets as if searching for his spectacles—‘is it, indeed! I thought it was a note from Mr. — to get me to vote for his bill, now before the House, which he knew very well I wouldn’t do; and as I had left my spectacles at my room, I could not read it.’

“ Mr. Morris took good care that his sons should never labor under the embarrassments he had for want of learning; for he gave them the

best classical education, and furnished them with ample means of storing their minds with all useful knowledge. One of them I well knew—a man of fine personal figure, a ripe scholar, and of high intellectual endowments. But, alas! his brilliant sun was early obscured by the intoxicating draught.

“In the Summer of 1796 C. F. Volney, the celebrated French infidel, philosopher, and traveler, was on his tour of the American Continent, collecting materials for *Theory of the Winds*, in his ‘View of the United States.’ In his journey westward, he took the unfrequented route down the Kanawha Valley, riding one horse and leading another, carrying his baggage, philosophical instruments, and camp equipage. It was told of him, that when in Greenbrier county—adjoining Kanawha—on starting one morning, his pack-horse refused to go. After several vain efforts to get the horse to obey the halter, Mr. Volney dismounted, and took from his provision-wallet half of a corn ‘pone’—or loaf of corn bread—and tied it to the crupper of the saddle on which he rode. Then leading the pack-horse up to it, till he got the smell and taste of the pone, he moved off very willingly after the horse which carried it.

“On passing the door of a cabin, three miles above Charleston, the proprietor came out and hailed him :

“ ‘Halloo, stranger!’

“ ‘Halloo!’ responded Mr. Volney, as he reined up.

“ ‘Whah are you from?’

“ ‘From France.’

“ ‘France?—some little town, I suppose, in Old Feginny?’

“ ‘No; it is a country in Europe.’

“ ‘Well, well, no matter. What might your name be, stranger?’

“ ‘Volney.’

“ ‘Whah are you bound for, Mister?’

“ ‘Away down here, to the west.’

“ ‘What business might you be after, stranger?’

“ ‘Well, I am on an exploring tour.’

“ ‘O yes! I understand you now; you’re going to buy lands, eh?’

“ ‘No, my friend,’ said Mr. Volney, pursuing his journey, ‘I am going



down toward the sunsetting, just to find out *where the winds come from.*'

"Mr. Volney pursued his journey leisurely down the Kanawha, and across the then North-Western territory, visiting various points, making astronomical and meteorological observations, and examining the geological structure of the country over which he passed, with observations upon its climate, inhabitants, etc. The result of his travels may be seen in his *View of the Climate and Soil of the United States*, etc.

#### SOLEMNIZING THE RITES OF MATRIMONY.

"Much difficulty was experienced in procuring the services of persons authorized to solemnize matrimony. By the laws of Virginia no Justice of the Peace, unless specially appointed by the County Court for that purpose, had that authority, nor had any minister of the Gospel, although regularly ordained, unless he was a settled resident of the county, and appointed for that purpose by the Court. All itinerant ministers were, therefore, of course, excluded. In 1804 there was not, I think, one person in Kanawha county who had authority to solemnize matrimony. The Court, therefore, in that year, appointed for this purpose two magistrates of the county—one in the lower part thereof, and the other in Charleston. The latter—who was the father of Mr. Williams—being centrally located, had many more calls for the exercise of his office than his colleague; but being unable, from lameness, to ride much without great suffering, he required all candidates for the connubial state to come to his dwelling. This they did, sometimes from a distance of twenty or even thirty miles, either on horseback or in canoes on the river.

"I well remember my surprise on opening the front door of the 'Squire's house, at early dawn one beautiful Summer morning, to find quietly seated on the benches in the porch, Mr. Leonard Morris, Jr.,—cousin, I believe, of Bishop Morris—and his betrothed fair one, accompanied by some fifteen or twenty of their friends, waiting till the 'Squire should be up to tie the nuptial knot. The party had descended the river in canoes, in the night, from the residence of the young lady whom Mr. Morris was about to espouse—a distance of twelve or fifteen miles; and arriving before day they had noiselessly and silently seated

themselves in the porch, that the slumbers of the family might not be disturbed by them. The nuptial ceremony ended, the happy pair and their companions returned to their canoes and were rapidly rowed back, ten miles, to the home of Mr. Morris, where a sumptuous breakfast had been prepared for them.

“On the arrival of a wedding party at the 'Squire's, all the town usually ran together to witness the ceremony. Amusing incidents often occurred on these occasions, one or two of which I will presently give as examples. The 'Squire adopted for his form of marriage ceremony, that given in the Discipline of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and for some time put the young couple through the entire form prescribed in that ritual, without any abridgment, requiring them to repeat after him, clause by clause, in an audible and distinct voice, 'I, —, take thee, —, to be my wedded wife, to have and to hold from this day forward,' etc. This was sometimes too severe a trial of their fortitude, in the presence of a promiscuous company of unbidden spectators, some of whom were ill-mannered and cruel enough to indulge in a titter at the embarrassment and faltering enunciation of the young pair who 'had the floor.' The 'Squire, after a while, at the suggestion of one of the Methodist circuit preachers, who was present at one of these weddings, left out that portion of the form which the parties were required to recite, and somewhat abbreviated the remainder, not cutting it down, however, to the mere skeleton commonly used by some Methodist ministers, in this 'progressive age.'

“On the arrival of a wedding party at the 'Squire's, one warm Summer day, the betrothed couple, with an attendant each, were shown into a private room to adjust their costume before appearing on the floor. Meantime, as usual, on these occasions, the large front room where the ceremony was always performed, was pretty well filled by a promiscuous gathering of townsfolk, eager to see 'the wedding.' Everything being arranged, and the 'Squire in his place, at a table near the back window, with the Rev. Abraham Azra, the preacher then on the circuit, by his side, the young swain and his affianced emerged from their room, and, with some perturbation, presented themselves before the grave official to

plight their faith to each other. The young gentleman, in a fit of abstraction, I suppose, had strangely forgotten to remove the beaver from his head, and was unconscious of his ludicrous breach of propriety, nor was it discovered by the downcast eyes of his blushing fair one. The 'Squire, who was intently peering through his large spectacles upon the book containing the ritual, saw naught else; and thus the ceremony commenced. The young lady's sister, who stood a little in the rear, blushed deeply with shame on his behalf, as well as her sister's; and glancing around among their friends, and seeing no one move to uncover the young gentleman, she plucked up courage to do it herself, and stepping up behind him on tiptoe, with a sudden jerk—which well nigh threw him off his balance, and filled him with confusion at the discovery of his blunder—she removed the hat from his head, and ran with it into the adjoining room, slamming the door after her. The spectators, whose risibility was hitherto with difficulty smothered down, found this too much to witness in solemn silence, and a general and audible titter burst forth. The 'Squire, who, with his eyes fixed upon the book, had seen nothing of what had occurred, raised his spectacles, and looked around to discover what could have caused such a breach of decorum. The reverend parson by his side, suppressing, with his handkerchief upon his mouth, the vocal titter in which he had himself indulged, called out '*Order! Silence!*' This having been obtained, the ceremony proceeded. On reaching that part where the official was about to pronounce the parties 'man and wife,' he directed them to join their right hands together. The young gentleman, as custom then required, had to draw the glove off that hand. This he essayed to do; but having, by the excessive heat of the day, and the embarrassing occurrence just mentioned, perspired *very* freely, his tight buckskin glove, now thoroughly moistened, defied all his efforts to draw it. After laboring some time ineffectually, he gladly held out his hand to a spectator who stood near, and had kindly offered to assist him. Placing his hat between his knees, the gentleman seized his hand, and by patient tugging finally got the glove off. This additional incident caused a renewal of the suppressed mirth, which broke out into a general and hearty laugh when the ceremony

closed, and from which the newly married couple took refuge in a hasty retreat to the private room.

A REMARKABLE OCCURRENCE.

The 'Squire was called upon, on another occasion, to marry a young gentleman and lady, at the residence of her father, some three miles distant. The parties belonged to two of the most substantial and respectable families in the county. The young man, Mr. B., a farmer, owned a valuable plantation, was estimable in character, industrious, greatly esteemed by all who knew him, and of fine personal appearance. The young lady, Miss S., was likewise well off in the world, amiable, accomplished, and admired by all. On the day appointed the young gentleman called for the 'Squire, and took him to the residence of the young lady's father. Every arrangement was complete. The invited company were assembled and in waiting in the large parlor. The young gentleman and his fair one, with their attendants, occupied a back room adjoining and opening into the parlor. The 'Squire was seated, book in hand, at a table near a side window, flanked by the parents and family of the young lady. The hour fixed upon for the nuptials was drawing nigh, and a few minutes more would have found the parties upon the floor, arrayed in their beautiful nuptial robes :

' Her's the mild luster of the rising morn ;  
And his the radiance of the risen day.'

"At this critical moment two gentlemen, on horseback, are seen riding rapidly up the lane. On reaching the gate in front of the mansion, they quickly alighted and hitched their horses, and, passing hastily across the green yard, they entered the hall, where, depositing their hats, whips, etc., they walked unceremoniously into the parlor, where the invited guests were seated. One of them was a Baptist clergyman, from a distant part of the county, who, upon entering the parlor, took his stand in front of the table at which the 'Squire was seated—no one inviting him to a seat. The gentleman who accompanied him was a Mr. W., a young man of good personal figure and cultivated manners. Without stopping, he passed directly through the parlor into the room occupied by the young

gentleman and lady about to be married, and who were seated together, with their attendants, awaiting the moment when they should be called before the 'Squire. Without speaking a word, or noticing any person, Mr. W. advanced directly to Miss S., and, bowing gracefully to her, offered his hand, which she took, rising from her seat at the same time; and together they at once walked out into the middle of the parlor! The Baptist clergyman, at the same moment, advanced a few steps towards them, and, in a clear voice and tone of solemnity, said:

“‘Dearly beloved, we are gathered together here in the sight of God, and in the presence of these witnesses, to join together this man and this woman in holy matrimony. \* \* \* Therefore, if any can show any just cause why they may not lawfully be joined together, let him now speak, or else forever hereafter hold his peace.’

“The whole company were astounded at this proceeding. Amazement was depicted on every countenance. The parents of Miss S. were horrified, and their lips sealed in utter bewilderment. The truth at once flashed upon their minds; and they saw that a gross and well-concealed deception had been practiced upon them by their daughter, and that a well-concocted and skillfully executed scheme by her and Mr. W. had now its denouement. Mr. B., almost stultified with amazement at the strange enactments he was witnessing, had unconsciously followed his false fair one and her new lover into the parlor, and his ears tingled with the announcement made by the clergyman. The latter made scarcely a moments pause for objections to the nuptials, but proceeded with the ceremony. Mr. B., indeed, had, at the momentary pause, hastily pulled his marriage license out of his pocket, opened it—his hand trembling the while—glanced hastily at the minister, as if about to hand him the license and forbid the bans; thence turning his glance, somewhat imploringly, to the 'Squire, and to the parents of the young lady, and finally upon the fair but cold-hearted deceiver herself, and her accomplice in the cruel plot. And when the minister pronounced them ‘man and wife together,’ Mr. B. uttered a very audible emphatic ‘*Amen! So be it!*’ and ordering out his horse, he abruptly, but silently, took his departure.

"I will now inform the reader—what may have been already, in part, anticipated—that a mutual attachment, resulting in an engagement to each other, had long existed between Mr. W. and Miss S. But her parents were strongly opposed to the match, and forbade Mr. W. the house, and their daughter from seeing him. Subsequently she was addressed by Mr. B., who was ignorant of her pre-attachment and engagement, and whose suit was warmly approved and favored by her parents; and he felt encouraged by the manner in which his addresses were received by the fair one herself, who was unwilling to grieve her parents by rejecting him. Mr. B. pressed his suit, and her consent was urged by the parents, till finally she seemed, tactily, to acquiesce; and the day was fixed for the nuptials, as before related. In the meantime she had made the arrangement privately with Mr. W., the result of which the reader is already informed.

"It only remains to add, that Mr. B. afterward married an amiable and worthy young lady, by whom he was tenderly loved, and lived happily, and prospered in the world. It was known, both to Miss S. and her parents, that Mr. W., even before his courtship, had contracted a fondness for the intoxicating draught, of which he had occasionally given unmistakable evidence. Yet she preferred a reliance upon his solemn promise of amendment rather than to follow the wise counsels and warning of her parents. Let the fair young reader ponder the sequel! Mrs. W., as we learn, lived an unhappy life, and poor W. descended to—a *drunkard's grave!*"

## EARLY INCIDENTS OF CHARLESTON.

"At the beginning of this century the settlers on the Kanawha river were subject to many privations which are unknown to the present generation. Let us glance at some of these as we pass along, for the purpose of contrasting them with the advancement since made in the arts and improvements of the present age.

"Neither flour nor corn meal was kept for sale anywhere; and there were no mills nearer to Charleston than the Falls of Coal river, twelve miles distant, where somebody was enterprising enough to erect a little,

rickety grist 'tub-mill,' for the accommodation of the surrounding country. To this mill the good people of Charleston were wont to resort to get their wheat and corn ground. To reach the mill they had the Kanawha river to cross, and then pursue a bridle path 'over the hills and far away,' crossing in their devious route the mountain ridge dividing the waters of the Kanawha from those of Coal. Many a time have I taken my three-bushel bag of wheat or corn to this mill, from Charleston, on horseback, and mounted on the bag; and well remember with what difficulty I saved my bag from being drawn off by the numerous trees standing close to the path; and then, perhaps, have to remain at the mill all night to get my grist, or leave it till another time.

"At length—in 1805, I think—a 'floating mill' was erected on the Kanawha rapids, immediately below the mouth of Elk river. This was a 'tub-mill' of the simplest construction, placed upon timbers laid upon two pirogues, or large canoes.

"There was not at this time, so far as I have any knowledge, a saw-mill in the county. All the boards and plank used had to be sawed by hand. None was kept for sale, and every one needing such lumber, had to fix up his own saw-pit, procure his saw-logs, and have them sawed up in this tedious and expensive way. Scantling and rafters were made out of logs split up, while joists and other timbers were hewn out of the trunks of trees. Of cabinet-makers, there were none on the river; and what furniture was not brought over the mountains, was made in the roughest style by carpenters.

"Charleston was favored with a mail once in two weeks, carried on horseback, from Lewisburg, Greenbrier county, one hundred miles distant. Families were usually supplied from thence with coffee, tea, spices, and many other articles, brought by the accommodating mail-carrier on the same horse which carried himself and the half dozen pounds of mail.

"Salt, which is now manufactured so extensively on the Kanawha, was, at the time I speak of, often very scarce, and always dear—usually two dollars and fifty cents per bushel. At that price the proprietor of the old Kanawha Salines could afford to manufacture; but when the supply from Pittsburgh, by boats, reduced it to a lower price, the Kanawha

works were obliged to suspend. The salt water then obtained there was drawn from a well some thirty feet deep, on the slope of the right bank of the Kanawha river, six miles above Charleston. At that depth lay the solid rock which formed the bed of the river.\* Of this salt water it required about five hundred gallons to make a bushel of salt, which was of a dirty brown color, and saturated with 'bitter water,' as it was called. The works at the Salines were very limited; and the little profit then derived from the manufacture afforded no inducement to enlarge them.

“Such was the condition of the salt manufacture, when—in 1808, I think—the fertile genius of Tobias Ruffner, one of the Ruffner brothers of the vicinity of Charleston, brought to light the untold riches—the great saline reservoir—hidden beneath the deep stratum of solid rock which underlies the Kanawha river and its alluvial bottom lands, and, indeed, a large portion of the West. Mr. Ruffner was a plain, unlettered farmer, but a man of extraordinary genius. He cultivated a large farm, and was his own carpenter, cooper, blacksmith, agricultural instrument maker, and artificer in other mechanic arts, and made all his own tools in each department. His ever active and penetrating mind conceived the idea of the existence of a great reservoir of pure and strong salt water below the stratum of rock over which the river flowed. So well satisfied was he of this, that he took a lease for a term of years on the old salt works, with the determination to penetrate the rock in search of the supposed hidden treasure. Accordingly, he went to work and made his augers and other implements for the purpose; and having sunk a new shaft down to the rock, and placed therein a wooden cylinder—the hollow trunk of a tree—to shut out the water, he commenced boring the rock. The dissuasives of his friends, and the ridicule which was heaped upon him by his neighbors for his ‘visionary notion’ of a great salt lake beneath the rock, would have discouraged almost any other man. But none of these things moved him in the least. He went steadily on boring the rock; and when at length his augers became too small by attrition on the sides of the bore, he made larger ones, and commenced again. Of the depth of the stratum he, of course, had no knowledge;

+



and after penetrating to the depth of one, two, or three hundred feet, men of ordinary courage and perseverance might have become disheartened, and abandoned the work in despair. Not so with Mr. Ruffner. His indomitable courage faltered not—onward he went. At length, at the depth of over four hundred feet, his auger suddenly plunged downward several feet. On drawing it up a stream of water followed the auger, and soon filled the wooden cylinder, and flowed out over the top thereof in a rapid stream, the full size of the bore. On examining this water he found it to be pure salt water of extraordinary strength—forty-five gallons of which yielded a bushel of the finest quality of beautiful salt!

“This discovery electrified the whole Valley, and everybody now applauded the sagacity of the discoverer. Mr. Ruffner told his neighbors up and down the river that they might each go to work and bore the rock on their own lands, and have their own salt works. Mr. Ruffner immediately made a copper tube the size and length of the bore, and inserted it therein, to shut off the veins of fresh water intervening, and erected extensive works for the manufacture of salt upon a large scale. Other salt works soon sprang up; and now Kanawha salt is supplied in extensive quantities to all parts of the great West.

“Two miles farther up the river, on the same side, is the celebrated ‘Burning Spring,’ situated on the margin of a small marsh, at the distance of three or four hundred yards from the river bank. It is a misnomer to call it a *spring*; for it is nothing but a basin or round hollow in the earth, of the capacity of two or three barrels, in which stagnant water stands at the same level as the water in the adjacent marsh, but has no stream running from it. The water is kept in a state of constant ebullition, like boiling water in a pot, by the carbureted hydrogen gas which issues from the earth at the bottom of the basin. On holding a lighted torch near the surface of the water, the gas instantly ignites with a strong flame, and continues to burn till the water is all evaporated, and a light blue, flickering flame remains for some days afterward.

“Opposite to this ‘Spring,’ in the sloping bank of the river, are many similar hollows or basins, without water, out of which the gas constantly

issues. I have seen the women, residing near, hang their wash-kettles over these basins, and heating water by the flame from the gas, which they ignited for the purpose. Even in the margin of the river, for several rods up and down the stream, the gas is perpetually bubbling up.

“The gas escaping from the earth here is doubtless from the same great laboratory of nature, in the bowels of the earth, as that which flows up through the perforated rock, from the great saline reservoir beneath it.

#### ANNUAL ELECTIONS.

“Among my recollections of early times on the Kanawha, I might mention the annual State elections as then held. By the Constitution and laws of Virginia, then in force, none but freeholders were entitled to vote at these elections. In Kanawha county, however, at the time I speak of, so few of the citizens were freeholders that this qualification of a voter was, by common consent, waived. Not only were all the white males of lawful age resident in the county permitted to vote, but minors—mere boys—and even travelers on their journey, passing through the town, and transient persons, without any home, were brought in, and, without any objection, allowed to vote.

“The elections were held annually in the month of April, and kept open three days. The manner of conducting them was this: The election was had in the court-house, where the whole county voted, and was conducted within the bar, where two clerks were seated at tables with poll-books, and large sheets of paper ruled in perpendicular columns, wide enough to contain the names of the voters. At the head of these columns were written, severally, the names of the candidates, and underneath them, as the election progressed, the names of the electors who voted for them, as the votes were given *viva voce*. It is evident, then, that the state of the vote for each candidate could be seen at all times during the election.

“The only officers then elective by the people were Representatives in Congress and the State Legislature. During the election the candidates ranged themselves on the bench occupied by the Court when in session,

which was an elevated platform extending across the end of the court-room, with a railing in front. The Sheriff was the judge of the election, and by him voters were admitted, one at a time, within the bar. The voter's name was entered on the poll-book, and he was asked by the Sheriff, in a voice audible over the whole court-house, 'For whom do you vote?' The elector, turning to the bench, and glancing along the line of candidates—each of whom, perhaps, at the moment is grinning on him a smile of expectancy—he announces audibly, looking, and perhaps pointing, at the preferred candidate as he speaks: 'I vote for Mr. A. for Congress, and for Mr. B. and Mr. C. for the Legislature.' 'Thank you, sir,' 'Thank you, sir,' is simultaneously responded by Messrs. A., B., C., with a bow and a broad smile of complacency, and the voter's name is entered in each of the three columns headed with the names of these three candidates. Passing out at the end of the bar opposite that which he entered, he is taken by the friends of the candidates voted for into the court-house yard, where their barrels or jugs of whisky are placed, and, if he uses the 'critter,' he is helped to a *grog* at each place by the aid of a tin-cup and a pail of water.

"Before opening the polls on the first day, it was customary for all the candidates to be present, and each of them to make a 'stump speech,' from a stand erected for the purpose in the court-house yard, in which he defined his position, giving his views on the chief political topics of the day and on matters concerning the immediate interests of the county. The first occasion of this kind at which I was present was the election in Kanawha county in April, 1804. A small temporary stand, large enough only for the speaker, was fixed up in the court-house square. There were a member of Congress and two members of the Legislature to elect. The candidates for Congress led the way. There was but one of these, however, present; the other appeared by *proxy*. The one who was present made a popular harangue, suited to the opinions and tastes of those whom he addressed, and plentifully spiced with 'words of learned length and thundering sound,' but guiltless of sense and method. The proxy of his opponent followed, and, in a clear and sensible speech, gave an exposition of the principles and views of the gentleman whom

re represented. Edmund Morris—the Bishop's elder brother—one of the candidates for the Legislature, then took the stand. He was tall and slender, of a fine personal figure, and withal very handsome, and of exceedingly graceful and engaging manners, and an eloquent and popular speaker. He addressed the audience upward of an hour, and was listened to with deep attention. Some attempts had been made to prejudice his election on account of a vote he had given in the Legislature at its previous session. This he noticed at some length, and made a most triumphant vindication of his course, and retired amid the applause of the whole assembly. William Morris—Edmund's cousin—followed, in a well-delivered and dignified address of some twenty minutes. Two or three other candidates subsequently occupied the stand, the last of whom was Col. John Reynolds, the original proprietor, I believe, of the town, and who resided in a beautiful mansion back of it, near the base of the hills. He was aged about forty years, a small, spare man, thin visage, and stern countenance, but friendly and sociable in his manners—a fair specimen of the generous and hospitable Virginia gentleman, and exceedingly popular in the county. On mounting the stand, and looking around upon the audience, and bowing, he addressed them as follows:

“Friends and fellow-citizens! I am a candidate for the House of Delegates of the General Assembly; and according to custom, I suppose I must make a speech. But so much time has been occupied by my worthy friends who have already addressed you, that I will only detain you a moment. You all know my political principles and my opinions concerning public affairs. If you choose to elect me, I will serve you to the best of my abilities; if you don't, you may go—” closing the sentence with an oath and an expressive waive of the hand, and turning round with an independent, care-for-nobody air, he stepped down from the stand amidst the vociferous cheers of the audience. He was elected by a large majority.

#### JACK NEALE, THE CONVICT.

Among the juvenile reminiscences of the author of this autobiography while a resident on the Kanawha, I find some notices of a free colored

man, whose story is of some interest, on account of the cruel wrongs which he suffered, and his subsequent prosperity in business; and I give it to the reader:

“Jack Neale was a descendant of the African race, a native of Maryland, near the District of Columbia. He was either free born, or after he grew up, purchased his freedom, I do not now remember which. He learned in early life the business of a blacksmith, and wrought at it on his own account many years; during which time he married, and had a family of several children, and made, by his industry and attention to business, a comfortable and genteel support for his family, and was respected and esteemed by all.

“While thus enjoying the blessings of freedom, and all the comforts of his own quiet home and the domestic circle, a heartless fiend—a slave-dealer—with his hired myrmidons, forced an entrance into Jack’s house, one night in the autumn of 1802, dragged him out of his bed, handcuffed, fettered, bound, and gagged him, in the presence of his wife and children, whom they overawed into silence by threats; then throwing him into a light wagon, which they had ready at the door, they hurried him off to the Ohio river, at Wheeling, where, with several other negroes for the Southern market, he was put on board of a boat, and taken down the river. As soon as the gag was removed from Jack’s mouth, he poured upon his cruel kidnapper a torrent of eloquent and bitter reproaches and appropriate epithets, the spontaneous ebullitions of the tumult of feeling which burst forth at the barbarous outrage committed on his personal rights and liberty, and warned the slave-dealer that the moment he got his liberty he would *take his life*.

“In descending the Ohio river some humane person secretly furnished Jack with a file, with which, at night, when every one else on board was asleep, he cautiously filed his fetters and handcuffs so nearly asunder that he could, at a favorable time, soon cut them off and free himself. The favorable moment occurred on reaching Gallipolis, four miles below the mouth of the Great Kanawha river, where the boat was moored to the bank for the night. About midnight, when all beside on board were locked up in sound slumber, Jack quietly severed the irons from his

ids and feet ; and having purposely noticed where the ax had been  
ced, he seized it, and approaching the kidnapper as he lay asleep in  
berth, with one blow from his muscular arm, Jack buried the ax deep  
his devoted head, and he was

“At once dispatched :  
Cut off even in the blossom of his sin,  
Unhousel'd, disappointed, unaneal'd ;  
No reckoning made, but sent to his account  
With all his imperfections on his head.”

“ Jack then deliberately walked ashore, and took the highway leading  
ack into the country, toward Chilicothe. He had gone but a few miles,  
then, the next morning, he was pursued and overtaken by the Sheriff  
and a posse of men. Jack gave battle, when surrounded and ordered to  
stop, and defended himself some time against fearful odds. But he  
was overpowered in the unequal contest, and knocked down and bound,  
and taken back to Gallipolis ; and as the offense was committed within  
the jurisdiction of Virginia, he was taken to Charleston, and confined in  
the dungeon of Kanawha county, to await his trial.

“ Jack, as we have seen, meditated from the beginning the death of the  
man-stealer, who had, as he conceived, most justly forfeited his life by  
robbing him of that which he held dearer than life—his liberty—and  
ragging him away to be sold into perpetual bondage, and deprived of  
the privilege of ever again seeing, or even hearing of his wife and chil-  
ren. When freed from his fetters and chains on the boat, he could  
have made his escape without staining his own soul by imbruing his  
hands in the life-blood of a fellow-being. But the deep and all-pervad-  
ing sense of the wrong he had suffered, he alleged, could be satisfied with  
nothing short of the terrible revenge which he took. And having ac-  
complished the bloody deed, his vengeful spirit seemed appeased ; and  
he never afterward spoke of the act otherwise than with an apparent  
self-satisfied complacency, that indicated a conscience at ease. And  
this view of the deed he steadily maintained with evident sincerity.

“ At the County Court succeeding his arrest and imprisonment, Jack  
was indicted for murder in the first degree, and soon afterward put upon  
his trial before the Court and a Jury, found guilty on his own admission,

and sentence of death passed upon him. When called upon by the Presiding Judge to 'show cause, if any he had, why sentence of death should not be passed upon him,' he arose with all the dignity and self-possession which conscious innocence of crime and the justice of his cause could impart, and addressed the Court. Jack was not tall, but had a heavy and compactly built frame, indicating great physical strength, a large head, and an intelligent countenance—the most intellectual and expressive I have ever seen in one of his race—such a countenance as I love to look upon and admire—as one in which the whole soul within is mirrored out. His personal appearance was remarkably commanding and dignified, his action, his gesticulation in speaking easy and natural, and his voice strong and yet musical and pleasant. In addition to all these, Jack was indued by his Creator with an order of intellect far above the average classes of his race. And had he been blessed with a good education, his name might have been inscribed on the rolls of fame and the pages of history as one of the most eloquent speakers and able writers of his day. He had

'A heart once pregnant with celestial fire;  
 Hands that the rod of empire might have sway'd,  
 \* \* \* \* \*  
 But Knowledge to his eyes her ample page,  
 Rich with the spoils of Time, did ne'er enroll;  
 Chill Penury repressed his noble rage,  
 And froze the genial current of his soul.  
 Full many a gem of purest ray serene,  
 The dark, unfathomed caves of ocean bear:  
 Full many a flower is born to blush unseen,  
 And waste its sweetness on the desert air.'

"But to return from my digression. Jack arose, as we said, to show to the Court cause why sentence of death should not be passed upon him. He gave an account of his life, the obtaining of his freedom, his marriage, his children, his labors for their comfortable support, the happiness of his own humble home, and his fair prospects of the future. But these golden hopes, he said, were blasted forever—cut down in a moment. The spoiler came; deprived him of his liberty; dragged him forcibly and suddenly away from all he loved on earth, to reduce him to cruel and perpetual bondage, far away from those loved ones and

at happy home he had spoken of. He gave a circumstantial account what subsequently occurred, down to the details of the just retribution which, as he alleged, Providence had visited, by his own hands, upon the demon in human form, who was the author of the horrible wrongs he had suffered. He defended himself ably against the charge of 'murder,' and pleaded in a forcible manner for his innocence, claiming

to be a case of clearly 'justifiable homicide.' If his reasoning and arguments were clear and forcible—and they were such—his appeals to the feelings of the Court and the crowded audience which filled the court-house were irresistible. Although his speech was delivered in his own artless language, it told upon the hearts and sympathies of the audience with none the less effect. None who heard it could remain unmoved. The Court, the bar, the jury, the spectators—all—paid the tribute of unbidden tears to the power of the untutored eloquence of one of 'nature's noblemen,' and all were convinced of the truth of his story. I regret that I have no report of this address. If I had it to give the reader, I am sure it would, in true, effective, and touching eloquence, compare favorably with the celebrated appeal of the Irish patriot, Emmett, before the Court by which he was condemned to death.

"After sentence was passed, the Court, the bar, the jury, and the spectators generally, united in an earnest petition to the Governor to grant a reprieve to Jack for three months, that time might be given to obtain legal proof of his freedom, and the confirmation of the facts of his case as related by him. The Governor promptly granted the reprieve. Under Jack's direction, his counsel obtained the necessary testimony to establish his right to freedom to the entire satisfaction of all. Another petition was then prepared, and numerous signed as before, strongly recommending the prisoner as a fit subject for executive clemency, and praying the Governor to grant a full pardon to him. The *pardon* was granted. And Jack was brought out of the dungeon and discharged.

"For some reason, not now recollected, Jack did not immediately return to his old home in Maryland, but concluded, by the advice and persuasion of his new friends on the Kanawha, to remain a while, and resume his trade as a blacksmith. Accordingly, he procured a set of



tools, and opened a shop in Charleston, and pursued his business as a blacksmith. Being a good workman and attentive to his business, he had as much as he could do, and won the esteem and respect of all his customers and neighbors.

“One day—September 13, 1805, as I find noted by W. in his memorandum book—a countryman purchased a hoe from Jack, and, without paying, walked off with it. Jack told the man that he sold only for cash, and that payment for the hoe must be made before he could allow it to be taken away. The man cursed Jack, refused to pay, and walked on. Jack followed and remonstrated, but to no effect, except the additional curses of the other. Seeing nothing was to be gained by expostulation, Jack took the hoe out of the man’s hand, and returned with it to his shop. This was too much to be borne from the ‘black rascal;’ and the knave from whom the hoe was taken went immediately to a Magistrate, and took out a warrant for the arrest of Jack for ‘assault and battery,’ and put it into the hands of the Sheriff to execute. Jack had, in the meantime, been advised of what had been done; and when the Sheriff called on him Jack desired him to stand off, as he would not be taken but by force. Jack was well aware of the penalty incurred by the offense when committed by a ‘nigger.’ And his independent spirit was roused by the wrong attempted by the countryman, and by the thought of the ignominy he was doomed to suffer, for no real cause, at the ‘whipping-post,’ and he determined to defend himself to the last. The Sheriff then summoned a posse of some six or eight stout men, and went in pursuit of Jack, who had in the meantime retired across Elk river, till he could make some preparations to escape the following night, and leave the Kanawha forever. But the Sheriff had received information of his whereabouts, and with his posse surrounded his place of concealment and commanded him to surrender. Jack was a man of almost giant strength, and could have kept the Sheriff and posse at bay in a fair contest of muscular strength. But being surrounded on all sides, he received a blow from behind with a heavy club, which felled him to the earth and so stunned him that, before he could recover, he was overpowered, bound fast, and dragged before ‘Squire C., a Magistrate from the coun-

try, who happened to be in town. On the *ex parte* testimony of the man who attempted to carry off the hoe, Jack was sentenced by the 'Squire to receive *one hundred lashes* on his naked back ! and the Sheriff was ordered by the 'Squire to administer them forthwith, at the 'whipping-post,' in the open court-house yard. The Sheriff, after stripping Jack, bound his arms fast with a cord around the whipping-post, and procuring a long, heavy 'cowhide'—a hard leather thong made of a strip of ox hide, twisted like a rope—and taking his position, he commenced the *stripes* upon the broad, naked back of the unfortunate criminal. Being a humane and feeling man, he went at the cruel task imposed upon him with evident reluctance and emotion, and administered six or eight stripes, not very heavily laid on. 'Squire C., who was standing beside the Sheriff, becoming indignant at the humane leniency shown by him, seized the cowhide out of the Sheriff's hand, and rudely pushing him aside, assumed the office of executioner in addition to that of Judge, and laid on the remaining stripes himself ! This he did with so much earnest zeal that the blood followed at every stroke from the lacerated back of the poor innocent sufferer. When the 'Squire had counted out the round hundred lashes, Jack turned toward him, and with a significant shake of his head, and an expression of countenance suited to the words, said to him : ' *I'll mark you for this,* 'Squire ! So you had better keep out of my way.' This was hint enough for the 'Squire. He *did* keep out of Jack's way ; and from that time, while Jack remained on the Kanawha, whenever the 'Squire came to town, he always carried his rifle with him. So soon as Jack was unbound from the whipping-post, before putting on his clothes, he had his back sponged with whisky, regardless of the temporary suffering which it caused.

"Jack continued his business on the Kanawha but a few weeks after this. His lofty and independent spirit still smarted under a sense of the inhuman treatment he had suffered, and the ignominy which he imagined followed him. Becoming dispirited and discontented, he closed up his business, and returned to Maryland.

"Some ten years after Jack left the Kanawha, W. was standing one day on the wharf at Georgetown, District of Columbia, looking at the ship.

ping, when an athletic, gentlemanly colored man stepped up to him, and cane in hand, and his hat under his arm, accosted him :

“ ‘ Why, master Williams, is this you ? I am *very* glad to see you, master ! How do you do ? ’

“ ‘ My good fellow, you have the advantage of me. I do not recollect you. Where and when did you know me ? ’

“ ‘ Why, master Williams, don’t you remember *Jack Neale*, who was your near neighbor in Charleston, on the Kanawha river, ten years ago, and who made your cooper’s tools when you were a boy ? ’

“ ‘ Why, Jack ! is it you ? ’ grasping his hand cordially. ‘ I am glad to find you here, and to see you look so well. Tell me, where have you been these ten years, since you left the Kanawha ? and what have you been doing, and how are you getting along ? ’

“ To all these questions Jack gave very satisfactory answers, with an account of himself, down to the present time. He was now in very profitable business as ‘ stevedore ’ on the Georgetown wharf, and had about thirty other negroes in his employment, in loading vessels under his direction and superintendence. He had brought his family to Georgetown, and was living in easy circumstances—quite the gentleman. The last time W. saw Jack was near a year after this interview, when he met him one day on Pennsylvania Avenue, Washington City. The ‘ stevedore ’ was walking, cane in hand, at the head of about a score of stout negroes, who were trudging along in single file, some six feet apart, with a nine-inch cable on their shoulders, which they were taking from Georgetown to the United States Navy-Yard, for one of the vessels of war at anchor there.

REV. DR. HENRY RUFFNER.

“ During his sojourn on the Kanawha, Mr. Williams formed an intimate acquaintance with a congenial spirit, a son of David Ruffner, Esq., resident half a mile above Charleston, on the river. Henry Ruffner, the boy I allude to, was some four years the junior of Williams ; but his sober-mindedness and steady habits, his love of books, and the pursuit of knowledge, seemed to annihilate the difference in age. In their

tastes and in their feebly aided desires for mental improvement, as well as in their recreations and amusements, and their views and feelings in general, the hearts of these two juvenile friends beat in unison, and they sought and enjoyed each other's company as much as the proper attention to their daily avocations permitted. And after Mr. Williams left the Kanawha, in 1807, they maintained, with some interruption, a written correspondence for many years. I hesitated, when I commenced this paragraph, about giving the reader the name of this young friend of Mr. Williams, as he is still living.\* But as I write in all kindness to him, and cherish the recollections of our youthful associations and friendship, I hope the reverend Doctor—for he has long been a distinguished divine in the Presbyterian Church—will pardon the liberty I have taken. I propose nothing more here than a very brief notice of his gradation from the poor farm boy—or 'clodhopper,' as he called himself—to the learned and able divine and distinguished author.

"At about the age of twenty years, at his own earnest desire, his father took him from the farm and placed him at an academy in Lewisburg, in the adjoining county of Greenbrier. While here his youthful mind was drawn to the path of life, and he became a subject of the regenerating grace of God, and connected himself with the Presbyterian Church, thenceforward adorning his profession by a Godly walk and chaste conversation. His mind was soon strongly inclined to the work of the ministry; and after due consideration of the matter, he determined to devote himself to that high and holy calling. From Lewisburg he was transferred to Washington College, Lexington, Virginia, where, after completing his literary education and graduating, he spent two years more in the study of divinity, and then entered the field of the ministry in the Presbyterian Church."

While here as a student, in one of his letters to his friend Mr. Williams, dated Lexington, June 6, 1812, he writes:

"While drinking at the Castalian fount, I almost forget to raise my head, and view the passing scenes of real life, and grow inattentive to the calls of social friendship; yet I have not lost the tender feelings

---

\*Died in 1861.

of nature. The remembrance of my old friends and companions is still 'pleasant and mournful to my soul;' and as soon shall the mother forget her child as I the friends of my youth.' \* \* \* \*

" 'You ask me what profession I have chosen. About eighteen months ago it pleased God, my Heavenly Father, to awaken me to a sense of my lost condition, and after some severe trials, to give me a feeling interest in the Redeemer's love. I have, in gratitude, determined to devote my time and feeble talents to his service. The doctrine and practice of the Presbyterians please me best. I have, therefore, united myself to them—My plan is to continue at the study of general science till I shall accomplish a thorough literary course, which I will complete in eighteen months, and have considerable leisure time for reading divinity. I then intend to study divinity two years before I set out. I shall then have nearly reached my twenty-sixth year. A serious task! But he who wishes to be eminently useful must be patiently industrious.'

" After completing his theological course above indicated, Mr. Ruffner traveled a year or more through various parts of the country, and afterward ministered for some time to a congregation on the Kanawha, at the Salines, I believe."

The reader—and I hope the writer of it, too—will pardon me for inserting here one of his letters entire—omitting a short paragraph of local concern—as an example of his friendly and social feelings—"the genial current of of his soul:"

" ' KANAWHA SALT WORKS, }  
February 9, 1816. }

" 'MY DEAR FRIEND:—Looking over some of my old papers the other day, I cast my eye on an old letter, the superscription of which was in your handwriting. Instantly a hundred recollections rushed into my head. I picked it up and read it. It is a memorial, as well as a part of our former correspondence. I ransacked all my papers, and found seven or eight more—nearly all of the letters which I received from you. A re-perusal of some of them caused me to say to myself, 'How come it that this correspondence has been dropped? Surely it ought not so to be.' So I was resolved that it should be so no longer—at least through

my neglect. It is needless for me to inquire into the cause of said suspension of intercourse—whether through laziness that was mutual, or laziness that was singular—since I feel satisfied this, and not disregard, was the cause. How could it have been any personal disregard, as we were the friends of each other's youth; and though, in that hot-headed period of life, we were associated for years together, we had never had, to my remembrance, even the slightest altercation? On the contrary, our habits and our tastes were, in many important respects, similar. The same inclination toward literary pursuits was visible in us both. In the practice of virtue you were my superior; yet I, perhaps, equally felt its excellence. In some other respects—too tedious to mention—I have always thought you peculiarly calculated to be my friend. But somehow or other a frequent change of residence, at different seminaries, where new acquaintances were constantly accumulating, drove you partially out of the habitual current of my thoughts, and I consequently grew less attentive as a correspondent. Whether a like cause has made you any the less desirous to continue our intercourse, be your own self the judge. As for me, I can assure you—and your knowledge of human nature will render you more convincible of the fact—that my return to Kanawha has led me habitually to remember old times, and with them old friends. And where long experience has assured me of the real worth of those friends, my affection for them has returned with renewed vehemence.

“Your first letter to me from Chillicothe is dated May 31, 1807, and gives an entertaining history of your voyage from this county thither. Dear me! what a busy old fellow Time is! That event—your removal to Chillicothe—seems but a little while past; and yet it is nearly nine years. When I glance rapidly over my intervening transactions, I seem to have been doing this, that, and t'other thing, and going here, and there, and everywhere. You left me, in 1807, a farmer's boy, going on seventeen years of age, full of the wild sport of youth, and yet a little tinctured with the sober thoughts of manhood—now working, now swimming, now raccoon hunting, now reading, etc. How could I or any body else have imagined for me that I was to be anything else than a

clodhopper all my days ! I worked in the fields a year or two ; then with my father in sinking hollow sycamore trees into the mud, till we were all sick of it. Providence had so arranged matters, however, that I should be taken from the plow and the river mud and sent to Greenbrier. Here I got at it when in my twentieth year ; and here I found my element. Next, He that opens the eyes of the blind was pleased to exercise His mercy toward me. After long consideration, the ministry is not only within my reach, but is my choice. I went thence to Lexington, where I finished a course of education, which, when we parted in 1807, I never dreamed of obtaining. Next, I traveled through western and eastern lands, and have returned to Kanawha, where I now expect to settle. You have also been bustling about a good deal, and as I learn, have got back again to your old stand. (Mr. Williams had removed to Washington City in 1814, but returned to Chillicothe the following year.) Well, suppose we turn in, like clever fellows, and write each other regularly, at least, if not very frequently. God has been truly good to us, in bringing us through so many troublous years of life in health and safety. May my conduct prove my gratitude ! I write this in the hope that yourself and family are well. May I soon see from under your own hand the confirmation of my hope ! Write me about yourself, your family—father, brothers, etc. You see what an egotist I am in this letter. I claim your excuse from my anxiety to hear of yourself, etc.       \*       \*       \*       \*       \*       \*       \*

“I live in a little house a few yards from my father’s, and lead, I might say, a kind of amphibious life—part hermit, and part a social being. My house is so solitary that I can’t get even a cat to stay with me, and mingle with our family and friends.

“But I must conclude. Pray give my respects to your father, living, and your brothers ; but particularly to Mrs. Williams, whom I remember with great regard.

“Your affectionate friend,

“HENRY RUFFNER.”

I copy the following paragraph from another of his letters, dated “Kanawha Salt Works, July, 10, 1816 :”

“‘As to myself, I can only say, that I am engaged in trying to persuade the people of this country ‘to do justly, to love mercy, and to walk humbly with their God.’ No remarkable success has hitherto attended my preaching; yet I am not altogether unrewarded by the ‘Giver of every good and perfect gift,’ since I can perceive a manifest change of moral conduct, and of the general bias of sentiment in regard to religion among us. In some cases hopeful impressions have been made—particularly among the female part of my audiences, who are in general much less given to sordid pursuits than the men. I trust that God will yet have mercy upon us, and send us a season of refreshing from His presence to cheer this dry and baren ground.’

“After ministering some time to the congregation on the Kanawha, Dr. Ruffner was called to the Presidency of Washington College, at which he had graduated. This was a more appropriate sphere for the exercise of his talents, and he soon became distinguished as an able divine and as a polemic writer. The degree of Doctor in Divinity was conferred on him while at the head of the College above named. In the philanthropic movements and reforms in his native State he took, we believe, a prominent part, and mainly contributed, a few years ago, in giving such an impulse to the cause of human freedom in Western Virginia. He lately published an elaborate work, entitled ‘Fathers of the Desert,’ in two volumes, which I have not seen, and can not speak of its merits. The reverend Doctor has, I believe, retired from public life, and is now enjoying a ‘green old age’ at his native home.”



## CHAPTER XVI.

## EARLY INCIDENTS.

Recollections of Colonel Joel Ruffner—Names of First Settlers—Buffalo Lick—Killing Game—An Engraved Stone—Manufacture of Salt by the Indians—Transportation of Salt—Keel Boating—River Traffic—Cider Royal—Table-ware of the Pioneers—The First Blacksmith—Scarcity of Luxuries—Sugar Making—The First Physician—How he was Regarded—Scarcity of Leather—Want of Shoes—The Pioneer Judge—Court Days—Hunting and Trapping—Captain John Bowyer—Bowyer's Ferry—Ann Bailey—One Trip as Mail Messenger—Observations by the Way—Teays's Valley—Hog Drovers, and the Corn Crop—Navigation of the Kanawha River—Tradition of a Silver Mine—George Harmon—Facts of his History—Abia Rece—Mrs. Hansford—Old Residences—The Champion Wood-Chopper—A Pre-historic Road—Items from County Records—General Washington's Lands, etc., etc.

The following incidents were related to the writer in conversation upon the early history of this county, by Joel Ruffner, a son of Daniel Ruffner, and grandson of Joseph Ruffner, who was among the first settlers of the county. Colonel Ruffner has a superior memory, and is truthful and reliable. His recollections run back nearly three-quarters of a century, and embrace many subjects which will, I have no doubt, very much interest the present citizens of the county.

"The first settlers of this section of country were the Clendennins, Morrisises, Sees, Aldersons, Youngs, Tacketts, Cobbs, and Casdorps. Joseph Ruffner, Sr., moved to Kanawha in 1794, and purchased the bottom extending from the mouth of Elk river, up the north side of the Kanawha, to the creek now called Wilson's hollow. This tract was then owned by George Clendennin, from whom Joseph Ruffner purchased. He also purchased the 'salt spring,' which was situated about four hundred yards above the mouth of Campbell's creek—five miles above Charleston—together with the adjacent tract of land both above and below it bordering on the river. This property, even then, was considered va-

able on account of the saline water ; and was owned by John Dick-nson.

"Before this county was settled by the whites the salt spring, or 'buffalo lick,' above referred to, was visited daily by buffaloes, deer, and elk, in consequence of its saline qualities. The paths leading to it from the hill-sides were cut so deeply into the earth that they can be traced even to the present day. The early settlers kept themselves supplied with fresh meat by watching for game at this spring. They could there find one or more of the different animals named at almost any hour during daytime ; but they gathered around it in greater numbers during the night.

"A short distance below the mouth of Campbell's creek, and immediately upon the bank of the Kanawha river, was a large, oval-shaped stone, on which were engraved, or chiseled, representations of all the different classes of animals which inhabited this country, including even the fish and serpents. These engravings were well executed, and evinced great skill on the part of a former generation of people inhabiting our Valley. The old citizens claimed that it was done by the Indians, who encamped about the salt spring for the purpose of hunting and killing game. If it were done by the Indians they most certainly possessed more skill and ingenuity than is generally attributed to them as a race.\*

"This beautiful stone was quarried into blocks suitable for building purposes by Colonel Andrew Donnally, and used by him in constructing chimneys for salt furnaces. It was a great mistake that it was not preserved as a relic of an ancient civilization in the Valley of the Great Kanawha.

"There seems to be a general understanding among the old settlers that the Indians made salt from the water obtained from this spring, and used it to cure the meat of the game which they killed in great quantities, by keeping their hunters stationed in the vicinity of the 'lick.' This, to say the least, is a very reasonable conclusion, since it is asserted that

---

\*The Indians, in the opinion of the writer, had nothing more to do with these engravings than they had with building the mounds which we find in almost every portion of North America. The United States was inhabited, beyond all doubt, by a pre-historic race, of which I have spoken in another chapter.

they shipped large quantities of elk meat and venison down the Kanawha, in bark canoes, to their settlement at the mouth of Old Town creek, near Point Pleasant.

"The first salt shipped from the Kanawha Salines was in boats called 'pirogues.' They were made from the largest-sized poplar trees, dug out like a canoe and ranging in length from sixty to eighty feet. Afterwards a better class of boats was introduced, known as 'bitterheads.' They were made very much on the style of the common flat-boat now used on our small rivers for carrying light freights.

"William Plummer, who lived near Marietta, Ohio, father of Rev. Dr. Plummer, who now resides in South Carolina, was, perhaps, the first man who navigated the Great Kanawha river with a 'keel-boat.' His freight generally consisted of pottery of different kinds, made of clay, including milk crocks, jugs, bowls, jars, and all such articles as the people might give him special orders to bring. A leading article of traffic in those days along the river was 'cider-royal,' made by boiling three or four barrels of fresh apple cider down to one or less, thus adding to its strength as a beverage. Mr. Plummer was an exceedingly popular man among all those with whom he did business. He was noted for remembering his promises. When citizens requested him to bring them certain articles he never failed to do so.

"The kind of ware furnished by Mr. Plummer, together with tin-cups, pewter basins, spoons, and plates of the old settlers, set off their tables quite nicely.

"According to my recollection," continues the Colonel, "at an early day pewter dishes were used in this country almost exclusively, among all classes. In those days people labored under many disadvantages. We had no mills, no merchants, no tanneries, no black-smiths, no carpenters or shoemakers, no tailors, no lawyers or doctors, no school teachers or preachers. All were farmers, and the farmer had to do pretty much all his own mechanical work, such as filling wagon-wheels, making plows, harrows, scythe-snathes, etc., etc.

"The first regular blacksmith who came to this country was John Greenlee, who was a good mechanic. I do not recollect the year in which

he arrived, but it was in early times. He brought with him a full set of tools, and did all the work in his line for the early salt-makers, as well as make plows and shoe the horses for the people for many miles around. It is needless to say that he did not idle any of his time away.

"Luxuries were scarce in the early history of this county. If a person desired tea or coffee he had to send by the mail-carrier to Lewisburg, in Greenbrier county, for it. The mail was carried on horseback from Lewisburg by way of Charleston to Guyandotte. It was not regular in its arrival and departure, in those days, as it is at the present time. High water and ice were often in the way of the carrier, and often occasioned unavoidable delays.

"Tea and coffee were very costly a half century ago. Families substituted for them, teas made from golden-rod, or dittany, and coffee made of rye and chestnuts. Sugar was made in great quantities from



SUGAR MAKING, THE OLD WAY.

the sugar-maple trees, in the Spring of the year. The real-coffee and tea were considered quite a luxury by the old people. They were scarcely ever used oftener than once a week—every Sunday morning—and no one was allowed more than one cup. Children were given potato soup for breakfast in place of coffee, and each had his porringer of mush and milk for supper.

"There were no professional physicians in this country in early times. The old women furnished all the medical assistance that was usually required in the different settlements. Their remedies were mostly herb teas, and they nearly always effected cures. It is true that the population

of the country was comparatively small ; but a death within Kanawha in those days, was a very rare occurrence. When a citizen, however, was called hence, the people would gather from many miles around to attend the funeral, or 'burying,' as it was then called. Dr. Eoff was one of the first physicians who came to Charleston, perhaps the very first. I remember on one occasion," continues the Colonel, "he was called to my father's house to render medical assistance to a young man who had accidentally been hurt. The sight of a living doctor was actually more frightful to all the young members of the family than the presence of a wild bear or wolf. All of us thought a doctor was never sent for unless some one was about to die.

"It was a very difficult matter to get shoes in early times. There were no shoe stores nor shoe shops. A Mr. Blaine, father of Mr. Charles Blaine, who lived about two miles below Charleston, and from whom 'Blaine's Island' took its name, had a small tannery, which was located on the farm formerly owned by Judge George W. Summers, now the property of his son, Lewis Summers, Esq. By speaking to Mr. Blaine several months in advance of Winter, leather could be secured, but not otherwise. He always had orders fully six months ahead. One pair of shoes around was the yearly allowance to each member of the family, from the oldest to the youngest. This rule was never deviated from by the old denizens. If you wore out your pair before Spring rolled around, it was your misfortune. I speak from experience. I have many times gone to my partridge-traps, in my bare feet, when the snow was ankle deep. If there were any partridges near the traps, I would stand on one foot and hold up the other, goose-fashion, until they would go into it. My good mother, in extreme cold weather, would give me a pair of woollen stockings to wear when I would visit my traps, which would add much to my comfort.

"The first Judge who presided on this Circuit, whom I can remember, was Judge Coulter. At that time the counties were large. His circuit extended from Botetourt county to the Great Tattaroy river (Big Sandy -) The inhabitants of this country generally were unlettered, rough mountaineers, and came from a great distance to attend Court as witnesses.

jurors, and suitors. Court days were important occasions, and were only excelled by general musters and camp-meetings.

"In the time of my earliest recollection there were but few houses in what is now the city of Charleston—not over seven or eight at most. Very little of the land of what is now the site of the town was then cleared. The bottom, extending from the mouth of Elk to Wilson's hollow, seventy years ago, was almost an unbroken forest. The timber was as fine as could be found upon the Continent, and of as great a variety. I have frequently seen four men chopping upon a standing tree, and when it would fall it would mash down several other trees which stood around it. There were but two families then living between the residence of Mr. Silas Ruffner, (formerly the property of Daniel Ruffner, Esq.,) and the mouth of Campbell's creek. One of these families, Abraham Baker, lived in the building now owned and occupied by W. C. Brooks, a short distance above the mouth of 'Black Hawk hollow,' and the other, a Mr. Bowman, resided in an old log cabin at the mouth of 'Oake's hollow,' where Dr. J. P. Hale's large salt furnace now stands. At that time all the 'narrows' from the upper end of the bottom on which the city of Charleston now stands, up the river as far as Campbell's creek, could have been purchased for less than \$500. Fifty years afterwards it was valued at fully \$1,000,000. On this stretch of land there were at one time seven or eight salt furnaces, sixteen salt wells, with almost inexhaustible beds of coal in the adjacent hills. Several of these furnaces have been abandoned on account of other and better locations, and as a matter of course the property is not so valuable now as it was twenty or thirty years ago.

"There was a certain class of men who settled in this country at an early day, whose occupation was mainly hunting, trapping, and fishing. Game of almost every variety abounded in this county about the time it was first settled; fish were found in the Kanawha river and its tributaries in great quantities and varieties, and the woods were filled with trees of wild bees. It was truly a land of 'milk and honey.' I have known hunters to kill bears by the hundred in the Fall of the year, thus securing a sufficient supply of bear-meat to last them until the next Fall. When

on a bear hunt, it was not considered proper to kill deer or elk, except for 'camp meat.' Wild turkeys were killed and their breasts used in place of bread; venison was stewed with bear-meat, which, the hunters claimed, gave it a superior flavor, and rendered it quite palatable. I have known hunters, in early times, to bring bear-meat to market, for which they would find a dull sale at five or six cents per pound, and venison hams they could scarcely sell at twenty or twenty-five cents a pair, or saddle.

"Esquire John Slack, (father of John Slack, Sr., of Charleston,) who lived near Porter's shoals, on Elk river, was a superior hunter and trapper, especially for fish. He constructed a trap in the rapids of the Elk, near his residence, and frequently took out of it a large canoe-load at one haul. Tobias Ruffner also had a fish trap at Campbell's creek, constructed by building a picket fence around the point of land now hedged in by the levee at the east end of the bridge. He had gates constructed so that they could be opened during the continuance of a rise in the river, allowing the fish to pass up the creek, and when the water began to recede, the gates were closed; and it was not an unfrequent occurrence to find a wagon-load of fish within the enclosure. The neighbors, on all hands, were invited to come and get a supply of fresh fish, 'without money and without price.' The largest fish that I ever knew to be caught in the Kanawha river weighed 102 pounds. It was caught on a trot-line by a man by the name of John Ward, near the present steam-boat landing."

This narration embraces many subjects and incidents. It is plainly told, and is as strange, in some matters, to the present generation, as fiction itself, and yet it is every word true. Old times in Kanawha county differed very greatly from the times and customs familiar to the present generation. Styles, however are always changing, so that seventy-five years in the future, the manners, dresses and customs of the present age will be as strange, and even ridiculous, as those of the same number of years in the past appear to us now. Change is written upon everything in nature, and its law is as unalterable as the laws of life, and of God.

## RECOLLECTIONS OF CAPTAIN JOHN BOWYER.

Captain John Bowyer, now residing at Winfield, Putnam county, has been for many years a man of considerable prominence in the Kanawha Valley. He was born in 1794, and his father, Peter Bowyer, moved to Sewell, Greenbrier county, in 1798. The Bowyer homestead was situated at Bowyer's Ferry, on New river, a noted crossing in olden times; and Captain Bowyer, being of an observing mind, has treasured up much of the early history of the Valley. I shall proceed to narrate such incidents as he could call to mind in an interview had with him recently in relation to the history of Kanawha.

"Ann Bailey," said he, "frequently stopped at our house on Sewell mountain, when traveling to and from the fort at Point Pleasant, with her packages of ammunition. She was a small woman, was very active, was always well armed, wore a hunting-shirt, rode a black pony, and dearly loved whisky. The house of my wife's grandfather, Major John Cantrell, who lived on the Kanawha river two and a-half miles above Point Pleasant, was also one of her stopping-places. She was of English descent, and always put the letter 'h' where it did not belong.

"In 1810 my father carried the mail one trip from Bowyer's Ferry to Catlettsburg, Kentucky, and his report of that trip was about as follows: 'The first house west of the Ferry was Abram Vandall's, where Fayetteville now stands. Next was John Jenkins', at the foot of Cotton Hill; next was James Hupp's, at Kanawha Falls, and from that point to the Kanawha Salt Works, thirty miles below on the Kanawha river, there was only an occasional log cabin. Charleston was a very small village, embracing not more than a dozen houses. At the mouth of Coal river Stephen Teays and one or two other families resided. From that point to the mouth of Scary creek, where the road left the river, there was no one living. Some two miles from the mouth of Scary was the residence of John Hubbard. Next was Edmund Morris', at the crossing of Poplar Fork; next, in close proximity, in Teays' Valley, were the houses of Henry Ellis, Samuel Hawley, Richard McAllister, Cadwallader Chapman, Joshua Morris, and James Conner, the latter residing just below the ford of Big Hurricane creek. The next settlement was at



Mud river, where Andrew Jordan had opened up a beautiful farm. John Merritt lived a short distance west of Barboursville, and at Guyandotte Thomas Buffington and a few others had founded a little village. Between Guyandotte to Catlettsburg there were no houses; and at Catlettsburg there were not more than ten or twelve rude log cabins.

"Teays' Valley derived its name from Thomas Teays, who lived in Bedford county, and who spent a considerable portion of his time every year in this Valley hunting and trapping. His first trip to this Valley was in 1774, when he purchased a considerable tract of land in the vicinity of the crossing of Poplar Fork.

"At an early day the road through Teays' Valley was called the 'State road,' and was the great thoroughfare from Greenbrier county to the Ohio river. It was largely used by the Kentucky hog-drovers in getting their stock to the Richmond market. Farmers raised nothing but corn, for which they always found a ready home market from these hog-drovers. They were so anxious to procure 'ready cash,' that they would sell their corn to the drovers in the Fall at  $12\frac{1}{2}$ @15 cents per bushel, and would have to pay 35@40 cents per bushel in the Spring. The result of this kind of management was, that the farmers were kept poor, and the land was worn out in a few years, from using it for the cultivation of corn alone. The land became so barren that the John Hubbard farm, above referred to, was called 'Pea Ridge,' because it was considered too poor to raise black-eyed peas. After steamboats had begun to run on the Ohio river, the Kentucky stock-producers shipped their stock to Pittsburgh and Cincinnati, and thus relieved the Teays' Valley farmers from this temptation to wear out their land in raising corn."

The Captain here gave me much valuable information in relation to General Washington's landed estate in the Kanawha Valley, which I have classified under a proper head for another chapter.

"As late as 1827," continues Captain Bowyer, "there was no house or clearing between Winfield and Teays' Valley. Ben Johnson, about that time, had a floating mill in the Kanawha river at Red House Shoals. In 1825, Epley & Co. commenced to dredge the Kanawha river. Keel and flat-boats were then in use. Soon afterwards a man by

the name of Thomas run a horse-boat on the Kanawha, but finding that it would not pay, he started a little steamer in the trade ; this being the first steamer that ever plied these waters. 4

"My son, George C. Bowyer, a few years ago found a white flint pipe near a mound on his farm, just below Winfield ; also several tomahawks, arrows, etc., which indicated superior workmanship to those implements which are usually attributed to the Indians.

"There is a tradition that there are several barrels of silver buried in the great bend of Kanawha, near where the town of Winfield now stands. The same tradition locates a silver mine in the vicinity of the same place. Some twenty or thirty years ago Reuben Cox, who lived a short distance from Red House Shoals, claimed to know the secret of this mine, and really exhibited fine specimens of silver ore ; but he died suddenly, and with him died the secret, if ever there was such a thing known. 7

#### RECOLLECTIONS OF GEORGE HARMON.

George Harmon resides near the mouth of Pocatalico river, is eighty-seven years of age, and can walk thirty miles as quickly, almost, as he could fifty years ago. A few months since he walked from his home to that of his relatives near Malden, in this county, a distance of upwards of twenty miles. He is unquestionably the most active man of his age I have ever met.

He came to Kanawha in 1799. At that time George Clendennin and a few others lived in Charleston, Thomas Upton resided just below Charleston, Thomas Cobbs owned a farm immediately above the mouth of Davis' creek, and his brother Fleming lived at the mouth of this creek. Stephen Teays then lived at the mouth of Coal river. Tackett's Fort, at that place, was destroyed by the Indians a few years prior to that time. John McElhenny and Chris. Tackett were the only men at the fort when it was attacked by the Indians. Tackett was killed, and McElhenny and wife, Betsy Tackett, Sam Tackett, and a small boy, were taken prisoners. They were carried to the foot of the hill near the fort, and McElhenny was tomahawked by the Indians. Mr. Harmon says that he, on

several occasions, saw the skeleton of McElhenny, which lay near the ruins of the fort for many years.

John and Lewis Tackett and their mother were taken prisoners while gathering turnips near the fort. John succeeded in making his escape, but Lewis and his mother were taken to the village of the Indians on the Scioto, where they were kept for about two years, when they were ransomed by the whites. Mrs. Polly Tackett was then about sixty years of age, and afterwards died, on Elk river, at the advanced age of 110 years.

He saw Ann Bailey on several occasions, and confirms everything that has been said of her.

Mr. Harmon claims that the Indians had a tradition of a silver mine near the mouth of Pocatalico, on a small branch emptying into that river. He is of opinion that there is no hoax about it, as he has recently found several excellent specimens of silver ore. He has, also, several strangely cut stones, which he found many feet below the surface of the earth, in the vicinity of his residence.

When he first came to the Valley there were elk and bear in great abundance. They, however, gradually disappeared, until the elk has become extinct within the Valley, and the wild bear has been driven back into the mountains.

Mr. Harmon, as I have stated, is eighty-seven years of age, and never took a dose of medicine in his life. It has been eighty-one years since he took a drink of liquor. He quit chewing tobacco about fifty years ago. Smoked for forty years, and stopped that practice, also, about three years since. He kept his tobacco in a tin box for many years, and would smell it, but never tasted it. He used snuff for many years, but left off that practice also. His last tooth was extracted twenty years since. He never had a tooth pulled until it got so loose that he could remove it with his fingers. He was married at the age of forty, and his wife is now sixty-seven years of age. He never used spectacles, and retained his sight until about four years ago, when he had erysipelas, which settled in his eyes, and very much impaired his vision. When he was a small child he was covered with boils, one of which was in

his left eye, and destroyed the sight. He says that his mother always told him that he was larger when one month old than he was at six months. He is five feet five inches tall, and never weighed over 148 pounds. His hearing was always good, until recently he has been troubled with beatings in his ears, which have slightly injured his hearing. +

Who will say, after reading this brief biography, that George Harmon is not a very remarkable man?

It is proper for me to state that, in order to render my accounts of the early history and incidents of the county as perfect as they could be made, I have consulted with nearly every aged citizen within the Kanawha Valley, male and female; and I am pleased to state that the recollections of those whom I have not given a place in my work, unqualifiedly corroborate those from whom I have quoted. Of such I cannot fail to mention Abia Rece, a nonogenarian, who resides at Milton, in Cabell county, who was born in Spottsylvania county, in 1784, and came to Kanawha in 1791. He is now an active old man, and promises to live many more years in the Valley of his adoption. Mrs. Sarah Kernon Hansford, wife of the late Felix G. Hansford, who resides at Paint creek, has reached the ripe old age of eighty-three, and her recollections, running back over three-quarters of a century, fully substantiated the facts which I have placed on record, to be crystalized, I trust, into enduring history. I might mention others, all interviewed at different times, and places, and under different circumstances, yet all of whom give in the same line of testimony, and certify to the facts, occurrences and events which I have chronicled.

## INCIDENTAL NOTES.

The first frame residence ever built in the Kanawha Valley, outside of Charleston, was the Hansford mansion, half a mile below Paint creek, now owned by Die Hansford, Esq. It was built seventy-four years ago, out of rived boards neatly dressed. The ceiling is cherry and the weather-boarding yellow poplar and walnut. The nails used in its construction were home-made. The building is now in a good state of pre-

servation, and will stand another three-quarters of a century, unless destroyed by accident.

In Charleston, on the bank of the river at the junction of Truslow with Kanawha street, stands a two story frame house which was built by James A. Lewis, in 1817. Mr. Lewis was a carpenter by trade, and while engaged in teaching school in Charleston, he, during mornings, evenings, and Saturdays, put up this building. It is also constructed of split boards, and is covered with cedar shingles. It indicates good workmanship, as well as the use of good material.

Wood-chopping was a great branch of industry in the vicinity of the Salines, for the first quarter of the present century. Coal had not been discovered, and wood was used exclusively for the manufacture of salt. For many miles in every direction, all of the timber was cut into cordwood and transported to the Salines. Men became quite skillful in the use of the ax, and it is claimed as a fact, and I am not disposed to dispute it, that Ebenezer Oakes, who died at his farm three miles below Charleston, a few years since, chopped eleven cords of wood in one day. He was pronounced the champion wood-chopper of his generation.

I omitted to notice in the proper place that on Tackett's creek, about half a mile below Coalsmouth, from eight to twelve feet under ground, is a corduroy road made of pine poles about three inches in diameter. The creek has cut its way into the embankment within the last few years, and has exposed to view this ancient road. The depositing of the alluvium above the poles could not have occupied less than two to three hundred years, and perhaps took much longer than that. It is, therefore, a very positive proof of the existence of a pre-historic race in the Great Kanawha Valley.

#### ITEMS FROM COUNTY RECORDS.

The County Court of Kanawha, November 4, 1792, fixed the following prices for inn-keepers: Whisky 10 pence per gallon; common wines 24 pence; best wines 40 pence; common rum and other imported spirits 24 pence; peach and apple brandies 10 pence; warm breakfast, supper and dinner 1 shilling each; cider and beer 4 pence; horse at

odder or hay per night 1 shilling ; corn and oats per gallon 8 pence ;  
odging per night 6 pence.

The same Court held April 8, 1796, allowed a premium of \$2 each for seventy-six wolf-scalps. At that time wolves were quite numerous in the county. The only way that sheep could be raised was by penning them securely every night. Scarcely a term of Court was held in olden times without an allowance being made for wolf-scalps.

In the same year I find the following record, which I copy *verbatim* :

"Benjamin Lemaster having been guilty of profane swearing in the presence of a member of this Court, it is ordered that for such contempt he be fined the sum of fifteen shillings, to be levied of his property, goods and chattels, and to be appropriated towards lessening the county and parish levy."

April 4, 1797, the following order appears upon the record book of the County Court :

"*Ordered*, That Ned, alias Dennis Canady, a mulatto man held in slavery by Samuel Fuqua, be continued in custody by the Sheriff until the said Fuqua shall give bond with approved security that the said Ned shall not be removed further from the court-house or hired further out than Reuben Slaughter's down the river, or John Reynolds' up the river; and that the said mulatto shall be well treated in case he behave himself well. But if he neglect the said Fuqua's business or behave rudely, then the said Fuqua shall convey him before the nearest Magistrate, and have him corrected as the law directs, and not abuse him at will ; and that he give bond with security in the penalty of \$1,000, conditioned for the safe delivery of the said mulatto whenever called upon by the Court."

At the same term of Court the following order was made :

"George D. Avery was presented for working at different kinds of labor on the Sabbath day;" and another individual was fined by the Court for having hunted on the Sabbath and boasted of it. The Court was much more strict in its enforcement of the law in those days than in recent years. Perhaps those now in authority might profit by an examination of the records of their predecessor—the County Court of Kanawha county of nearly a hundred years ago.

## GENERAL WASHINGTON'S LANDS.

During Braddock's war, General George Washington passed down the Kanawha Valley, and being prepossessed with the rich, level land along the river, determined to pre-empt such portions of it as he considered most valuable. Accordingly, at the close of the war he came into the Valley, and located and surveyed several large tracts of land, which I shall proceed to describe.

The first tract was the "Burning Spring," consisting of 125 acres, and situated on the Kanawha river, ten miles above Charleston. General Washington, in his will, speaks thus of this tract: "It was taken up by General Andrew Lewis and myself on account of a bituminous spring which it contained, so as to burn as freely as spirits, and is as difficult to extinguish."

His next survey on the Kanawha began at the mouth of Tyler creek and ran down the North side of the river to a point a short distance above the mouth of Coal river, embracing 2,950 acres. This was all level bottom land, and embraced one of the richest farming portions of the Valley. The next tract which he located embraced 2,000 acres, and extended from the mouth of Two and Three-fourth Mile creek to Coal river, including the valuable site for a city whereon the present town of St. Albans now stands. His next warrant covered the wide level bottom extending from the mouth of Pocatalico river down to the mouth of Little Buffalo creek, embracing 7,276 acres of excellent farming lands. His next, and last, tract included all of the bottom land, on both sides of the river, from the mouth of Plantation creek to the narrows, two miles above the mouth of the Kanawha. It included 10,000 acres, and had a frontage on both sides of the river for fully twenty miles.

The General, in referring to these lands in his will, uses the following language:

"It is acknowledged by all who have seen them that there is no richer, or more valuable land in all that region. They are conditionally sold for the sum of \$200,000, and if the terms of that sale are not complied with, they will command considerably more."

President Washington's Kanawha Valley lands were left to the children of his brothers. Two of them lived, for a number of years, opposite the mouth of Scary creek. Three grand-children of one of his brothers owned the land on the North side of the river between Big and Little Buffalo creeks. One of them married Howell Lewis, and the other two, George and Frank, lived with their sister.

Dr. Lawrence Washington owned the farm immediately below Red House shoals. He, however, sold it some twenty or twenty-five years ago, and removed to Texas. One of General Washington's nieces owned the farm opposite Nine Mile creek, now the property of James H. Miller, of Mason county. She married a Mr. Thornton, and after his death married ex-Governor Clarke, of Kentucky.

The tract extending from the mouth of Twenty-five Mile creek to the mouth of Scary creek, containing 4,000 acres, and nearly all bottom, was granted and confirmed on the 19th day of February, 1754, to Dr. James Craik for services rendered King George III, of England.

George, Frank, and Samuel Washington, named above, owned the sword of the President, and a cane which had been presented to him by Benjamin Franklin. Captain John Bowyer, of whom I have previously spoken, at the solicitation of the Washingtons, prepared a written history of these two relics, which was placed in the hands of Hon. George W. Summers, who was at that time a member of Congress from the Kanawha District, with the request that he present them to the United States Government. Judge Summers made a very able speech in presenting them to the Government, and the Washingtons, who had become financially embarrassed, looked for a large remuneration from the United States, but they were, in this expectation, sadly disappointed—they got nothing.



## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE MORRIS FAMILY.

The Morrisses the First Permanent Settlers of the Valley—Their Names—The White House—The Falls Property—Henry Morris, the Pugilist, etc., etc.

The Morris family came to Kanawha in 1774, and are now found in every portion of the Valley. They have married and intermarried, until the original Morris blood runs in the veins of thousands of persons who reside in this portion of West Virginia.

William Morris, Sr.,\* was the first permanent settler of the Kanawha Valley. Walter Kelly was the first to locate on the Kanawha river, but he was murdered by the Indians a few months after his arrival in the Valley. Mr. Morris came here soon after Mr. Kelly's death, and purchased the Kelly's creek tract of land from the widow of Mr. Kelly.

There were nine brothers of the original Morris family, viz: William, or "Billy," as he was always called, Henry, Joshua, Leonard, Levi, Edmund, John, Kellis, and Benjamin. There were but two sisters, viz: Betty and Franky.

William, as stated, located at the mouth of Kelly's creek, where Mrs. R. E. Tompkins now resides. John settled on the Kanawha, opposite the mouth of Campbell's creek, five miles above Charleston. Edmund and Joshua secured beautiful homesteads in Teays's Valley, and the other brothers settled at different points along the Kanawha river.

There were four "Billy Morrisses," and in referring to them it was often difficult to distinguish them from each other. "Old Billy" had a son

---

\*It is claimed by some of the Morris family, that Leonard Morris, a younger brother of William Morris, came to Kanawha in 1771, but my investigations do not sustain the correctness of that statement.

called "Major Billy." Carroll, a son of "Major Billy," had a son whom he called "Little Billy," who was a noted salt-well borer; and Edmund had a son who went by the name of "Falls Billy," because he resided at the Falls of Kanawha. 4

Old Billy Morris and Daniel Boone, the great hunter, were the first Representatives Kanawha county sent to the Legislature of Virginia. As stated in a previous chapter, Mr. Morris, though a man of superior intellect, could not write his name, and was, therefore, frequently placed in positions very embarrassing to him while a member of the Legislature. Consequently he made a resolution that his son should be educated; and at the age of seventeen he sent him to Washington College, at Lexington, Virginia, where he remained until he graduated in the classical course. Soon after his return home he was elected to the Legislature, and continued in this position for several terms, until he finally killed himself by over-indulgence in intoxicating drinks. Major Billy Morris was, therefore, the first and only classically educated man among the early settlers of the county.

John Morris had three sons, Edmund, John, and Thomas A., all of whom proved to be men of unusual genius. Edmund was a politician, and was said to be one of the most fluent and flowery of platform speakers. He represented Kanawha county in the Legislature several terms. John was a Baptist minister, and possessed unusual talents. Thomas A. was a Methodist minister, who worked his way successfully from the back-woods circuit, through the editorial chair, and presidency of colleges, to the highest position in the gift of the church—the office of a Bishop. It is said, by old citizens, that these men received their unusual mental endowments from their mother, who was believed to possess one of the most remarkable of intellects. John Morris exchanged his farm on the Kanawha for 22,000 acres of land on Mud river, and accordingly moved to Teay's Valley shortly after the beginning of the present century. 4

William Morris, Sr., built a large frame residence in 1798-9, on the hill-side, about a-half mile above the mouth of Kelly's creek, which was called the "White House." It was removed by Mr. John Tompkins, about two years since, to give place to the large brick mansion in which he

now resides. Charles Venable was the architect and builder of the "White House." While at work upon the building, he formed an attachment for Kitty, a daughter of Mr. Morris, whom he married at the close of 1799.

"Old Billy" Morris owned the Falls of Kanawha. He, however, presented it to his brother John, who in turn presented it to his brother Edmund, and he in turn deeded it to his son William, who always went by the name of "Falls Billy." In 1816 Aaron Stockton purchased this valuable property, and it now belongs to his heirs. It is thought to be one of the finest water-power locations in the world, and will some day be immensely valuable.

Henry Morris, one of the original family of nine, was a man of remarkable courage and physical strength. He was small of stature, but his activity, nerve and courage rendered him a foe, when enraged, who was feared wherever he was known. He could turn a summersault as easily as a circus tumbler; and struck with such force that one blow was generally enough to lay out an adversary in a fisticuff fight. It is claimed for him that he could kick a hat from the top of a pole nine feet high, without losing his balance. He was the most noted pugilist in the early history of this country, and was champion, not only of the "light weights," but was master of the heavy weights also, at every muster of militia, where the championship between shoulder-hitters was always determined.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## RELIGIOUS HISTORY OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

Wonderful Advancement of Religious Institutions—Organization of the First Society—Asa Shinn, the First Preacher—Names of Pioneer Preachers—Bishop Bascom, the first to Preach in Charleston—Bishop Morris—Dr. Power—Wonderful Conversion of Charles E. Baldwin, the Great Lawyer, and Skeptic—His Labors as a Minister of the Gospel—Quarterly Meetings—Presbyterianism in the Valley—The First Regular Minister of that Denomination Stationed in Charleston—Rev. Dr. Brown—His Usefulness in the Valley—Rev. Dr. Ruffner—Isaac Noyes—William Rand and Son—Their Usefulness as Citizens, etc., etc.

When I look at the wonderful advancement that educational and religious institutions have made in our midst, since the organization of the county, I can not but admit that we have been permitted to live in a prosperous and progressive age. Not quite a hundred years ago the first religious society was organized in the Kanawha Valley. Now there is no neighborhood on any of the tributaries of the Kanawha river, in which there is not found churches erected for the glory of the Master and the good of men. May we not, therefore, hope that the full-orbed light of God's eternal Truth will, in the near future, usher in the blaze of Gospel day in our beautiful Valley, when the Cross shall be lifted up, as was the serpent in the wilderness, on which the people may look and live forever!

There was occasional preaching in the Kanawha Valley prior to the organization of the county in 1789, but until after 1800 no regular religious society had been organized. It is generally left for Methodist ministers to pioneer the paths of civilization in every portion of the New World. In the formation of Christian societies in the Kanawha Valley, they were the first to act. Asa Shinn was the first regular minister who traveled this mountainous country. He was a man of ability, as well as energy, and left his impress upon the minds of the people, which has not

yet been wholly erased. He was followed by others of his own and sister denominations, who held the ground that he had taken ; and as the years rolled on, their numbers grew larger and still larger, and their influence widened as the population increased, until to-day the ministers are numbered by the hundred, and their followers are almost equal to the population itself.

In the Methodist denomination—and I have but limited means of obtaining information of any other sect, in relation to the early religious history of the Valley—the order of the ministers who were assigned to this circuit was about as follows: Asa Shinn, Jacob Turman, Samuel Brown, John Cord, Samuel Dement, William Pickett, Bishop H. B. Bascom, Bishop Thomas A. Morris, Thomas Lowry, Burwell and Stephen Spurlock, Francis Wilson, Alexander Cummins, Joseph Farrow, William McComas, Bishop H. H. Kavanaugh, Henry S. Fernandis, David Kemper, John H. Power, D. D., Robert O. Spencer, William Young, D. D., William T. Hand, David Reed, John W. Fowble, Thomas Gorsuch, H. Z. Adams, B. N. Spahr, Charles R. Baldwin, John G. Bruce, Bishop R. S. Foster, and others. This list, though not complete, embraces most of the Methodist ministers who traveled in this section of country before the year 1844, when the division of the Church took place. Since that time, perhaps fully one hundred different preachers have filled the various circuits and stations throughout the county.

Several of the gentlemen whom I have named, in after years became distinguished workers in the vineyard of the Master. Bishop Bascom, one of the greatest pulpit orators that the country ever produced, preached the first sermon ever delivered in the town of Charleston. Mr. Shinn and others had preached at various places within the county, but had not been invited to preach in the town. Bishop Morris was born and raised in the county, and traveled several circuits within the Valley prior to his admission into the regular ministry, in which he afterwards became so distinguished. Bishop Kavanaugh did not travel a regular circuit in the Valley, but frequently preached at camp-meetings and on other important occasions. Dr. Power lived in Charleston for a number of years, and in after years became an author of celebrity ; and was one of

gents of the Methodist Publishing House, at Cincinnati, for one or  
 erms. He was a man, of unquestioned ability and worth.  
 e ministry of Charles R. Baldwin demands more than a passing notice.  
 as a leading lawyer of the Kanawha bar, and was a noted skeptic.  
 great natural abilities were admired by all who knew him; and in  
 e he was superior to any of his associates. While in attendance  
 a protracted Methodist meeting he was converted, and from that  
 nt he felt the "call" to preach the Gospel. Accordingly he  
 l his law office, disposed of his library and business, and entered  
 inistry. He became quite as noted a minister as he had been a  
 r, and after laboring untiringly for six years, he died in 1839 of  
 rrhage of the lungs, at Parkersburg, Virginia, at the age of thirty-  
 . Very few men, since the days of the Apostles, ever consecrated  
 selves so fully to the work of the Divine Master, and to the minis-  
 at was committed unto him, as did Charles R. Baldwin. He was  
 a polished shaft in the quiver of the Gospel bow.

arterly and camp meetings were occasions among the early Chris-  
 in this locality, which were looked forward to with unusual inter-  
 Men, women, and children attended them from a distance of ten  
 enty miles, and the mountains rang for days, and even weeks, with  
 songs, sermons, and prayers. These meetings are still kept up by  
 ethodists, but they have lost much of the interest and enthusiasm  
 1 formerly attended them, though in many localities they are still  
 ly attended, and are instrumental in doing a great work in the con-  
 n of the people.

shaping the moral and religious aspect of the Kanawha Valley, the  
 yterian Church had very much to do; but her operations, unlike  
 of the Methodist Church, were almost exclusively confined to the  
 s and villages, while those of the latter extended to the "utmost  
 : " of civilization. The distinctive characteristics of the two  
 ches are most manifest in this particular; but while the Methodist  
 ch has always taken the lead in missionary operations, the Presbyte-  
 have always been fully equal, if not foremost, in Sabbath-school  
 , as well as in the cause of temperance.

The first Presbyterian minister who preached in the Kanawha Valley was Rev. Francis Crutchfield. His son-in-law, Herbert P. Gaines, was the editor and proprietor of the first newspaper ever published in Charleston—the *Kanawha Spectator*—and Dr. Nathaniel W. Thompson, whose wife was a daughter of Rev. Mr. Crutchfield, was the first resident physician of this town.

The next regular minister of the Presbyterian Church in Charleston, was Rev. Calvin Chaddock. He was a gentleman of fine education and an able preacher. Many of his descendants are still residing in the Valley, some of them holding responsible positions in the community.

The next regular minister was Rev. Nathaniel W. Calhoun, who was pastor of the Church in Charleston for many years, and was much beloved by his congregation and the community generally. He was quite an able minister of the New Testament, and was very liberal in his views; and he often went many miles into the country to preach to the people.

Dr. James M. Brown, who is still so well remembered even by the young people of Charleston, held a very prominent place in the affections, not only of the members of the Church of which he was the able and efficient pastor for many years, but also of the whole community. He was a man of whom it might truly be said, that while he had so many friends, he had but few, if any, enemies. He was a man not only abundant in labors, but was also a very able divine; he was also an author of some celebrity. He died in Greenbrier county, Virginia, in 1863. His son Samuel, a young minister of much promise, and also a beloved daughter, died near the same time. His youngest son, Rev. John C. Brown, who inherited many of the gifts of his father, is now pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Malden, in this county.

Of the laity, Colonel David Ruffner, who may be in a certain sense called the father of Presbyterianism in the Kanawha Valley, claims first attention. "My first recollection of him," said Hon. Greenbury Slack, an aged citizen of the county, now gone to rest, "was at the camp-meeting on Two-mile creek, of Elk river. He built a tent as large as any other three on the ground, working at it with his own hands and overlooking its construction, where he accommodated, during the entire

meeting, over one hundred persons, free of charge; and in which the evenings were spent in some of the most glorious prayer-meetings I ever witnessed anywhere. These meetings the old gentleman generally conducted himself. Mr. Ruffner always regarded all who 'loved the Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity and truth' as 'one in Christ Jesus.'"

He was the father of Henry Ruffner, D. D., LL. D., well known in the Kanawha Valley for the last fifty years. He was probably the finest educated man that this Valley has ever produced, ardently devoted to books from his early youth, and a close student up to the time of his death. He commenced preaching when very young, probably about the year 1815 or '16. He was not only an able minister, but was a writer of great perspicuity. He was the author of several valuable works, among which was a small work on the political aspect of slavery as applied to the State of Virginia, which, although short and concise, is thought by many to be the ablest argument ever given to the public on that subject.

Of the many pious laymen of this Church, Isaac Noyes, Esq., was one than whom I doubt if a more pious man or purer Christian ever lived in this Valley. He, like Enoch of old, for over fifty years literally "walked with God," having his "conversation in heaven," "from whence also he looked" *daily* "for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ." Although possessed of great wealth at the time of his conversion, still he literally gave up all, and "counted all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of God in Christ Jesus;" gave up business altogether, manumitted all his slaves that he held in his own right, and patiently waited for the coming of the Master. He died in 1872, as it were in sight of the "promised land," at the age of ninety years. Obeying the Divine injunction to the patriarchs of old, he taught the religion he professed to his children, and his children's children, nearly all of whom are following in his footsteps, and are worthy members of the Church of their father. Few, if any, contributed more to the promotion of religion and morality in the Kanawha Valley than did Isaac Noyes.

William Rand, Sr., was also for many years a pillar in the Church, and, like Mr. Noyes, lived



"Like a ship at sea, while in, above the world."

He died suddenly many years ago while reading his Bible, which was his constant companion, falling from his chair into the arms of death.

"How many fall as sudden, not as safe!"

His son, William J. Rand, was also a very worthy and honored member of the Presbyterian organization, and an efficient worker in the Sunday-school cause as well as in other institutions of the Church. He too having served his generation, instantly "fell asleep," in 1868, in the midst of his usefulness. How mysterious are the providences of God, and "His ways past finding out."

The Presbyterian Church still holds a proud position in our midst in the heaven-appointed mission of bringing men to the knowledge of the truth as it is in Jesus. May she increase more and more, is the prayer of the writer.

## CHAPTER XIX.

## RESOURCES OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

te—Advantages it Possesses—Effects upon the People—Agricultural and Pastoral—  
ducts, and Manufactories—Transportation—Navigation of Kanawha, Elk, and Coal  
ers—Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad—Four Reasons why it will Ultimately be the  
atest National Thoroughfare—Kanawha Coal Field—Eighty-Nine Feet of Coal  
asures—Positively Inexhaustible—Quotations from Professor Daddow—Iron Deposits  
lchness of the Ore—Where Found—Varieties and Qualities of Timber—Kanawha  
t Works—Early Salt Making—The "Great Lick"—How Wells were Originally Bored  
mprovements Introduced—Coal as a Fuel—Morris's Invention—Its Utility—Gas Wells  
Anecdote of a College Professor—Soda Ash—Superiority of Kanawha Salt—Names and  
pacities of Kanawha Furnaces, etc., etc.

he climate of the Kanawha Valley is not surpassed by that of any  
r portion of the Union. Its elevation, preserving it from the influ-  
s of malaria; its freedom from extremes of heat and cold, together  
its clear, limpid waters, and health-giving mountain air, make it  
of the healthiest portions of the globe. I doubt if there are as  
y square miles of contiguous territory which contain less low and  
npy land than does this Valley. Gastric and pulmonary diseases  
seldom known except when brought by persons coming from other  
es, who seek to avail themselves of the benefits of this health-restor-  
climate, and mineral waters contiguous to our Valley. Spring opens  
er, and winter is shorter than in most other portions of our country  
he same latitude. While autumn in many sections of the Union is  
ghtful, here it is; beyond peradventure, the most rapture-inspiring  
balmy, without danger of its sweetness cloying—every day drawing  
und developing in a still more wonderful manner, the royal beauties  
is romantic country. The season operates on every portion of man's  
re, and it is not easy to determine which division is most benefited  
by—whether the physical or intellectual obtains most advantage.

Certainly, any one who is acquainted with the powerful physique presented by the mountaineer, will not question the superiority of the West Virginian in this respect. Let the candid man, who seeks the truth, visit the Great Kanawha Valley, and the conclusion will be irresistible that here is the land long sought for—a land of health and beauty, where all the conditions of life may find their finest expression and fullest development.

#### AGRICULTURAL.

In the Kanawha Valley the agricultural interest has been somewhat neglected, and thrown in the background by the more dazzling display of mineral wealth; and these broken, hilly lands are generally not so attractive to the farmer, as the more level and open regions of the far West. Yet throughout the Kanawha Valley there are numerous tracts of surpassing fertility, and when not too steep the hill land will repay the cultivator. For special crops this country affords many advantages not found in level districts, among which are the varieties of climate afforded by the different directions of exposure, and the protection and more equal moisture derived from the dense forests. Indian corn, wheat, rye, oats, barley, and other cereals, though as yet grown to an extent sufficient only for home consumption, have been raised enough to prove that the soil of Kanawha is admirably adapted to their profitable cultivation as well as to that of nearly every vegetable common to temperate climates. Sorghum, maple sugar, and honey are among the productions. The former may now be found upon nearly every farm; the maple grows in our forests in at least two varieties; and the last, with culture, could be made an item of much profit. Tobacco is a most profitable crop, and so fine are the varieties raised here that the annual crops command the highest prices. Instances have occurred lately, where the sum of \$300 per acre has been realized by its cultivation. Possessing equal advantages in soil and climate with the great tobacco-raising States of Maryland, Virginia, and Kentucky, this portion of West Virginia yet offers physical inducements for the culture of that popular plant of which skillful and experienced planters would do well to avail themselves. In the

matter of fruit-growing, the Kanawha Valley is unequalled. The genial climate experienced here, and the diversity of soil and exposure, render facile the acclimation of any kind of fruit peculiar to temperate latitudes. On our mountains cranberries are found growing wild. Other berries find a sympathising climate, and yield satisfactorily. The grape culture is receiving increased attention, and all efforts in that direction have been crowned with success. For cattle this is one of the finest regions in the United States, and in many respects resembles Western Pennsylvania, with a more favorable climate. It should be a great sheep-raising country. There are already successful woolen factories in the Valley; and when the completion of the great railway lines shall have developed its manufacturing capacities, the true value of its agricultural lands will be fully understood.

#### TRANSPORTATION.

The Kanawha river, rising east of the Allegheny Mountains, in Ashe county, North Carolina, under the name of New river, traverses South-western Virginia, cuts sheer through the Appalachian chain at right angles, and thence flowing north-westward, empties into the Ohio at Point Pleasant, after a course of three hundred miles. The Kanawha is navigable for steamboats, at any stage of low water, to Brownstown, ten miles above Charleston, and sixty-eight miles from its mouth, and at ordinary high water to Cannelton, thirty-two miles further. The stream is from six hundred to nine hundred feet in width, with an equal and gentle current, uniformly supplied with water from its immense woodland and mountain drainage, rarely interrupted by ice in winter or by low water in summer; the navigation being decidedly more safe and reliable than that of the Ohio river above their junction, and always quite as available as the Ohio below. Its principal tributaries below the head of navigation are: the Elk, flowing from the north-east, and emptying into the main stream at Charleston; Coal river, flowing from the south, and entering the Kanawha twelve miles below Charleston; and the Pocatalico, from the north, joining six miles below the mouth of Coal. These steady, smooth, deep-channeled streams, with their tributaries, are all more or

less navigable for barges, raftable for lumber in high water, and susceptible of improvement to make them available for steamboats.

Elk river sends down its fleet of rafts and barges from Sutton and points above, more than a hundred miles from its mouth. Coal river, by means of locks and dams, has steam navigation thirty-six miles above its mouth, to Peytona, whence the Cannel Coal Company annually ships 1,200,000 bushels of that matchless fuel.

These streams naturally open up an immense extent of country, and inestimable stores of coal, iron, salt, and lumber, to the markets of the whole Mississippi Valley, with its 20,000,000 inhabitants, 16,000 miles of river navigation, and 21,000 miles of railroads.

Again, it will be seen by consulting the maps that this prodigious West, with its vast natural resources, its eager enterprise, and immense products, impatient of delays and distances, hampered by the insufficiency of its present outlets, finds through the Valley of the Kanawha its shortest, safest, and most economical route to the Atlantic Ocean and the markets of the world.

It is believed that when this route by rail and water-line has been opened and improved to its fullest capacities, it will be equivalent to all the other lines put together ; and that States and cities whose retarded progress now seems to indicate that they have nearly reached their limit, will then receive a fresh impetus, and advance with unequalled rapidity.

The Chesapeake and Ohio railroad, now completed to the Ohio river, connects the Mississippi Valley with the Atlantic sea-board through the Great Kanawha Valley.

This line has a number of advantages over other lines of inter-communication between the East and West :

First, Of being the shortest, as may be seen by consulting the tables of distances between St. Louis, Chicago, Louisville, and Cincinnati, in the West, and Norfolk harbor, on the Atlantic sea-board.

Second, Of having the easiest grades and fewest curves, thereby insuring superior economy and safety in the transportation of freight and passengers.

• Third, In the mild climate of its locality, thereby diminishing lia-

bility to accidents and interruptions from snow, ice, and breakage of machinery.

Fourth, In having its connection with the western river navigation at Huntington, a point on the Ohio river below all the bars and ordinary obstructions to free navigation, and only 150 miles above Cincinnati, and having its eastern terminus at Richmond, connecting with the waters of the Chesapeake bay and the harbor of Norfolk, both by river and rail. Norfolk, which has the most commanding commercial position of any city on the Atlantic seaboard, is the most central and convenient location for distributing Western products either Northward or Southward for ocean commerce, having the advantage of the largest and deepest harbor, safest and easiest of access, good anchorage and never obstructed by ice.

In brief, the superior advantages of this thoroughfare, by way of the Kanawha Valley, are so great and so essential to the growing trade of the West, that its opening has given an immediate and powerful stimulus to the agriculture and manufactures of all the Ohio region, and will inevitably build up, at favorable points along its line, large commercial and manufacturing cities, rivaling, if not surpassing, those on the more Northern and less favorable lines of transportation.

#### GEOLOGY.\*

"The rocks of the Kanawha coal field consist entirely of the coal measures, containing all the varieties of coal (save anthracite) known, oftentimes equaling, and sometimes excelling the most celebrated coals of other noted coal fields.

"It is characterized by geological features of great simplicity. The surface of the region is undulating. The loftiest hills rise in gently swelling outlines, no very prominent peaks towering, acute and rugged, to denote that the strata have been subjected to violent, convulsive, and upheaving forces. Everything bespeaks it to have been at one time an expanded plain, gently tilted from its horizontal position, so that its surface and the beds of rocks beneath, decline with a very slight but uniform depression towards the Northwest, to the Valley of the Ohio.

---

\*Upper Kanawha Coal Field, by M. F. Maury.

“ ‘ Its topographical features give evidence that its inequalities were caused by the furrowing action of a mighty and devastating rush of waters, which, by rapid drainage, scooped out numerous valleys and basins in the upper strata. It is, from this deep excavation by natural causes, combined with the other important circumstance of a nearly horizontal position, that we are to draw our estimate of the prodigious resources of a mineral kind possessed by the region before us ; for, whatever valuable material be inclosed in the strata, the horizontal position alluded to, keeps them near the surface, or at an accessible depth, over an enormously wide space of country ; while the trough-like structure of the valleys, and their great depth, exposes many of these deposits to the day under positions in which mining is the dip to the horizontal, and then rising as they extend West so as to present a Southeast dip, which continues to the hill between Kelly's and Witcher's creeks, where it is succeeded by a gentle inclination Northwest, which, in a short distance, is followed by a restoration of the Southeast dip. This latter continues to the Burning Spring, ten miles above Charleston, gradually elevating the strata so as to carry up the lower coal seams to some height in the hills, after which the counter dip to the Northwest re-appears and continues down the river to within two miles of the Ohio.\* ”

“ A resume' of what I have said is this : The Lower Series of the Kanawha Coal Measures, 950 feet thick, are formed in a belt about thirty-six or thirty-seven miles wide, dip to the Northwest at an angle of from twenty to one hundred feet per mile, are kept above water level for this distance by two anticlinal curves, and stretch across the country in a Northeast and Southwest direction.”

#### COAL.

The great substratum of commercial wealth of West Virginia is its coal fields. This State contains a larger portion of the Alleghany coal field than any other State through which it extends. Nearly 16,000 square miles of this great coal bed lie within this State ; and the greater

---

\*Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Virginia, for 1889, by Prof. W. B. Rogers, State Geologist.

part of this is drained by the Great Kanawha and its tributaries. The total coal area of the United States is 58,550 square miles. West Virginia, therefore, contains more than one-fourth of the coal fields of this country, and Kanawha county is the great center of this immensity of natural wealth.

The Kanawha, running to and joining at right angles with the Ohio, traverses the richest portion of this coal field base, leaving the embow-elled wealth of our mountains exposed in the most available manner to the operator.

This region is yet in the infancy of development, owing to peculiar circumstances surrounding it prior to the war ; but enterprise and capital are forcing their way to this unlimited mineral wealth. No other portion of our country has resources more inviting to labor, capital, and enterprise than this ; lying immediately in the track of Western immigration, it is attracting much attention from all parts of the East and North, and the latent elements of wealth cannot escape the scrutinizing searches of enterprise.

Instead of the bark canoe floating down our beautiful rivers, or the lumbering stage-coach plodding along their banks, the sharp, shrill whistle of the locomotive, and the sturdy puffing of fine steamers, break the stillness of our Valley and assure us of the steady advancement of civilization. Large flotillas of coal barges, loaded with thousands of tons of coal, are daily passing down to supply fuel for the needy ; while, instead of latent wealth, locked up in mountain fastnesses, the operator pays its value to the sturdy laborer who provides cheer and comfort for his family ; and thus many are made happy, comfortable, and wealthy by that which has been, heretofore, useless. Still, the development of this industry is in its infancy ; yet enough has been done to prove, beyond successful contradiction, that millions might be made where hundreds now are, in this enterprise ; and that the coal resources and consequent wealth of the Kanawha are among the things which are sure and permanent.

Prof. Harries S. Daddow, geologist and mining engineer, some years since made a reliable mineral exploration of West Virginia, and in a



less na  
ceptit  
El  
poi  
by  
it

216  
... Its topographical features give evidence that its inequalities were caused by the furrowing action of a mighty and devastating rush of waters, which, by rapid drainage, scooped out numerous valleys and basins in the upper strata. It is, from this deep excavation by natural causes, combined with the other important circumstance of a nearly horizontal position, that we are to draw our estimate of the prodigious resources of a mineral kind possessed by the region before us; for, whatever valuable material be inclosed in the strata, the horizontal position alluded to, keeps them near the surface, or at an accessible depth, over an enormously wide space of country; while the trough-like structure of the valleys, and their great depth, exposes many of these deposits to the day under positions in which mining is the dip to the horizontal, and then rising as they extend West so as to present a Southeast dip, which continues to the hill between Kelly's and Witcher's creeks, where it is succeeded by a gentle inclination Northwest, which, in a short distance, is followed by a restoration of the Southeast dip. This latter continues to the Burning Spring, ten miles above Charleston, gradually elevating the strata so as to carry up the lower coal seams to some height in the hills, after which the counter dip to the Northwest re-appears and continues down the river to within two miles of the Ohio."\*

"A resume' of what I have said is this: The Lower Series of the Kanawha Coal Measures, 950 feet thick, are formed in a belt about thirty-six or thirty-seven miles wide, dip to the Northwest at an angle of from twenty to one hundred feet per mile, are kept above water level for this distance by two anticlinal curves, and stretch across the country in a Northeast and Southwest direction."

#### COAL.

The great substratum of commercial wealth of West Virginia is its coal fields. This State contains a larger portion of the Alleghany coal field than any other State through which it extends. Nearly 16,000 square miles of this great coal bed lie within this State; and the greater

\*Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Virginia, for 1889, by Prof. W. B. Rogers, State Geologist.

able for all the requirements of trade and manufacture than the coals of any other portion of the Alleghany coal field.

“The seams of coal are more numerous and their thickness greater than any other portion of this coal field; it can be mined cheaper and with more economy generally, under the same rates of labor, than in any other section in this country, without exception. The markets of the West, and the great Ohio and Mississippi Valleys, are open beyond any controlling competition to the trade of the Kanawha in coal, oil, salt, iron, and lumber. Charleston is two hundred miles nearer Cincinnati than Pittsburgh, and always open to navigation; while the Ohio to Pittsburgh is frequently closed by ice in the winter, and interrupted by low water in the summer. The principal volume of the great and rapid increasing trade of the West may be diverted to the seaports of the East by way of the Kanawha Valley, with much economy in time and transportation. While fully fifteen per cent. of the discovered coal area of the United States lie within the Great Valley, it is a remarkable fact that there is less than five per cent. of the amount of coal consumed mined in that rich section. Yet the time is not distant when the West and South will receive their principal supply of fuel from this great coal center.”

The spirit of enterprise is beginning to manifest itself among the class of large land-holders, showing a disposition to dispose of their rich mineral lands in tracts that will justify capitalists in purchasing, and at the same time enable them to develop their various resources; with this spirit predominating, it cannot be long until this Great Valley will rival Pittsburgh's palmiest days.

Many of the predictions of the Professors have already been realized; and the Kanawha region is fast approaching the prominence that has been assigned it by Professors Daddow, Ansted, and other distinguished geologists.

Above Charleston on the Kanawha there are no less than eighteen workable veins of bituminous, splint, and cannel coal, ranging in thickness from two and one-half to eleven feet. The coals of Paint creek section, beginning twenty-one miles above Charleston, as proved by

Wilson's survey, and by many actual openings, are as follows, the first vein lying twenty-five feet above the mouth of the creek :

		Feet above the mouth.	Feet thickness of vein.
No. 1—	Coal—Bituminous.....	25	6½
" 2—	" ".....	50	6½
" 3—	" ".....	65	4
" 4—	" ".....	75	2½
" 5—	" ".....	85	2½
" 6—	" ".....	100	3½
" 7—	" ".....	150	2½
" 8—	" ".....	190	6
" 9—	" Cannel.....	230	4
" 10—	" Bituminous.....	270	3½
" 11—	" Splint.....	300	11
" 12—	" Bituminous.....	380	3
" 13—	" ".....	400	3½
" 14—	" Cannel.....	430	7
" 15—	" Cannel and Bituminous.....	410	5½
" 16—	" Bituminous.....	500	7½
Coal measures.....			89

There are two or three other veins already opened between Charleston and the mouth of Paint creek, which underlie those mentioned ; and there are still others below Charleston also worked, the most noted of which is the Raymond City nines, which are being very successfully worked by an enterprising and wealthy company of Eastern gentlemen.

Of the coal on Coal river, which empties into the Kanawha twelve miles below Charleston, Thomas L. Broun, in his report as President of the Coal River Navigation Company in 1866, says:

" For quantity, quality, and variety of splint, cannel, and bituminous coals, the Coal river region has been most favorably known since the year 1858, when attention of capitalists in New York and elsewhere were first drawn to the remarkably rich deposits of cannel coal on this river by Colonel William M. Peyton, the pioneer spirit of the Coal river enterprise. From the forks of Coal river to Marsh and Clear Forks of Big Coal river, a distance of forty miles, are found cannel, splint, and bituminous coals in great abundance, and of the very best quality. So, likewise, are to be found similar deposits from the forks of Coal to Boone Court House, on Little Coal, a distance of twenty miles. These veins vary from two and one-half to twelve feet in thickness ; and as many as five distinct workable veins are found on the same property, lying horizontally, and above the beds of the streams."

These two sections have been here mentioned more especially than others, because they have been more thoroughly explored and developed; but, perhaps, nowhere in the State is coal wealth more conspicuously displayed than in the banks and bluffs of Elk river. Many veins have been worked in a small way, which vary in thickness from five to thirteen feet, and the coal is of a very superior quality; some of it is famous for its extraordinary yield of distilled oil.

There are over fifty millions bushels of coal annually shipped past the mouth of the Kanawha to the West, from Pittsburgh and other points on the upper Ohio, which might be supplied from the coal beds of Kanawha, Coal, and Elk rivers with greater regularity, less cost, and less risk than it is now done;—with greater regularity, because transportation is seldom obstructed; at less cost, for the reason that the lands containing it can be purchased at from three dollars to one hundred dollars per acre, instead of from two hundred and fifty to one thousand dollars per acre, as in Pennsylvania; and, we are over two hundred miles nearer market; and the risk of shipment is less, because there is seldom any ice in the river, by which much coal is necessarily lost on the Northern waters.

The coal area of West Virginia exceeds that of Europe 6,000 square miles, two-thirds of which lie upon the Kanawha and its tributaries; and the yield per acre is greater than that of Europe; consequently we have in this region more coal than all Europe. Reducing the average thickness of the coal fields of West Virginia to six feet, we have over 94,000,000,000 tons, which at the average home value of three dollars per ton, gives us the enormous coal wealth of \$282,000,000,000. At the rate of the last annual production, the coal of West Virginia would last over 100,000 years, and if this production were increased twenty times it would still last 5,000 years.

The foregoing remarks have been based upon the trade in coal; but when I add that vast iron-ore beds are found in immediate connection with the coal, the importance of this region as a coal field is greatly increased on account of its use in the manufacture of iron. Another argument in favor of the coals of this section is that it has been successfully demonstrated to be the best in the entire country for smelting purposes.

## IRON.

Throughout the Kanawha Valley, iron ore may be found in almost every hill—in some places it is poor and meager, and in others it develops into rich, thick veins, always in close proximity to the coal.

The usual form of its appearance is in carbonates and oxides, from which the yield is about sixty to eighty per cent. of metal. But the real wealth of iron for this region lies not upon the Kanawha, but further South, upon New river, and in Southern Virginia. I again quote the authority of Professor Daddow:

“This region of iron ores will perhaps rival any locality in our country—Iron Mountain, Pilot Knob, or Lake Superior not excepted—either in quality or quantity. There is no limit to the resources in brown hematite in this region. It exists in massive beds of great extent, and ranges through a vast area of country. We have seen beds of ore in this region equal to the celebrated Cornwell deposits, and can state, from practical experience, that there is no richer or purer iron ore of this description to be found. The railroad line from the Ohio to the great iron and copper regions of Southwestern Virginia and North Carolina, not only gives the Valley of Kanawha an abundant supply of the richest and purest iron ores, and opens out a splendid mineral and agricultural region, but also opens direct communication between Virginia, North Carolina and the Great West, and I hope, at no distant day, the golden gates of the far Pacific.”

## TIMBER.

A great many people are unaware of the extent of valuable timber to be found on the banks of the Kanawha and its tributaries. The scope of country opened up by navigation and railroad is very great, embracing the counties of Mason, Putnam, Kanawha, Clay, Braxton, Cabell, Lincoln, Logan, Boone, Fayette, Nicholas, Summers, Greenbrier, Raleigh, Pocahontas, and Monroe. In each of these counties are to be found in great abundance, on the slopes of the mountains and in the hollows, black walnut, wild cherry, chestnut, hickory, oak, poplar, ash, hemlock, and all kinds of pine. The importance of this region as a timber produc-

ing country cannot readily be estimated. Its proximity to market, the cheapness of the timber, and of the labor in preparing and in getting it to market, are facts which cannot escape the observation of those in quest of this commodity. To those who are acquainted with the facts set forth above, it is unnecessary to elaborate the statements made. To those, however, who do not know the extent and value of the timber within easy reach, it must seem little short of the marvelous that so small a portion of it has been used. The reason, however, is obvious to those acquainted with the country. Up to the period of the war, although all these facts were known to a few, yet, owing to peculiar circumstances, this knowledge was not universal; and not till lately has the importance of this interest begun to attract general attention.

#### MANUFACTURE OF SALT IN KANAWHA.

I am indebted to our fellow-citizen, Dr. John P. Hale, a practical salt manufacturer, for the following well-written article on our salt resources, and whose permission I have obtained to copy it entire, though I eliminate that portion of his article which refers to the present manufacture of salt in Mason county as being foreign to a history of Kanawha county.

"Rich as is West Virginia in coal, iron, timber, &c., she is scarcely less rich in that indispensable necessity to human health and comfort, and to animal life—common salt. Fossil or rock salt has not been found in the State; but salt brines of greater or less strength, and in greater or less abundance are found by Artesian borings, at great or less depth throughout the Appalachian coal field, which underlies the greater portion of our State.

"The strength of these brines varies in different localities, and in different wells in the same locality; the range may be stated at say 6° to 12° by the salometer, Baume scale (distilled water being 0°, saturation 25°), but the average strength of the brines from which salt is now made is about 8° to 10°. The value of these brines depends, of course, upon their location, as regards accessibility, and cheap transportation of the products to market, as well as the convenient proximity of cheap coal or fuel, and timber for barrels. Only locations on the navigable rivers,

or lines of railways at present fulfill these indications ; but, as population increases, and new routes of travel and traffic are opened up, it is probable that new salt manufacturing localities will be developed.

“The principal points at which salt has been manufactured in the State, are Charleston, on the Great Kanawha river ; from West Columbia to Hartford City, on the Ohio river ; at Bulltown, on the Little Kanawha ; at Louisa, on the Big Sandy ; in Mercer county, on New river ; near Birch, on Elk river ; at the mouth of Otter creek, on Elk, and at a few other less important points, on a very small scale, for local use. At present, owing to the greater facility of reaching the markets of the great West by cheap water transportation, and the advantages of cheap fuel, salt is only manufactured, on a commercial scale, near Charleston, on the Great Kanawha, and in Mason county, on the Ohio. \* \* \*

“The Kanawha salt works are situated in Kanawha county, on the Kanawha river, commencing about three miles above Charleston and extending up the river for several miles, on both sides. These “Licks,” as they are called, have not only been known and extensively worked, from the first settlement of the Valley by the whites, but have been known and used, from time immemorial, by the Indian tribes, and frequented by swarms of buffalo, elk, deer, and other wild animals, before the advent of the white man.

“In 1753, when all this region was an unbroken wilderness, which had never been penetrated by the most adventurous white man, a party of Shawnees, who dwelt upon the Scioto, in what is now Ohio, made a raid upon the frontier settlements of Virginia, in what is now Montgomery county. Having taken the settlers unawares, and after killing, burning and capturing prisoners, as was their custom, they retreated, with their captives, down New river, Kanawha, and Ohio, to their homes. One of these captives, Mrs. Mary Ingles,\* who afterwards made her escape, and was returned to her friends, related that the party stopped several days at a salt spring on the Kanawha river, rested from their weary march, killed plenty of game, and feasted themselves on the fat of the land ; in the meantime, boiling salt water and making a supply of salt.

---

\*The great grand-mother of the writer.

which was carefully packed and taken with them to their Western homes. This is not only the first account we have of salt-making on Kanawha, but anywhere else West of the Alleghanies. In fact, if there is any earlier record of salt-making, from brine springs, anywhere in the United States, I am not aware of it. \* \* \* \* \*

"The early pioneer settlers, in a wilderness, without communication with other settlements, except by foot or bridle-paths, depended upon the Kanawha Licks for their scanty supply of salt. In those days of simple economy and provident thrift, when everything useful was made the most of, the women's wash-kettles were put under requisition for a four-fold duty; they boiled the daily hog and hominy, and other wholesome, frugal fare; once a week they boiled the clothes, on wash day; semi-occasionally they boiled the salt water for a little of the precious salt, and every spring they went to the sugar camp, to boil the annual supply of maple sugar and molasses.

"It is related that at one time, when there was an apprehended attack from the Indians, the few early settlers were posted at the mouth of Coal river, for protection. Being out of salt and suffering for the want of it, they sent some of their hardy and daring young men in canoes up to the salt spring, where they dipped the canoes full of salt water; and, getting safely back, the water was boiled, and the precious salt made under cover of the fort.

"Among the earliest land locations made in the Valley, was one of 502 acres, made in 1785, by John Dickinson, from the Valley of Virginia, to include the mouth of Campbell's creek, the bottom above, and the salt spring. Dickinson did not improve or work the property himself, but meeting with Joseph Ruffner, an enterprising farmer from the Shenandoah Valley, Virginia, in 1794, and describing this salt spring to him, Mr. Ruffner became so impressed with its value, that he then and there purchased the 502 acres upon Dickinson's own report, without himself seeing it, agreeing to pay for it 500 pounds sterling without condition, and other sums, conditioned upon the quantity of salt to be made, which might increase the price to 10,000 pounds sterling. Having gone thus far, he sold out his Shenandoah estates, and in 1795 removed himself and



family to Kanawha to look after his salt property. Upon arriving here, however, his penchant for rich farming lands overcame him, and he purchased, from George and William Clendennin, the large river bottom of 900 acres extending from the mouth of Elk river up Kanawha, and upon forty acres of which the village of Charleston had been laid out and started the previous year. This last purchase, and the subsequent attention to clearing and improving the farm, diverted Ruffner's attention, for a time, from the salt project; the delay was fatal so far as he was concerned; he did not live to execute his pet scheme or realize his cherished hopes. Dying in 1803, he willed the property to his sons, David and Joseph, enjoining it upon them to carry out, as speedily as practicable, his plans of building up extensive salt manufactories to supply not only the increasing local demand, but a larger and still more rapidly growing demand which was now coming from the many thrifty settlements throughout the Ohio Valley. During the elder Ruffner's life, however, he had leased to Elisha Brooks, the use of salt water and the right to manufacture salt; and in 1797 this Elisha Brooks erected the first salt furnace in Kanawha, or in the Western country. It consisted of two dozen small kettles, set in a double row, with a flue beneath, a chimney at one end, and a fire bed at the other.

"To obtain a supply of salt water he sank two or three 'gums,' some eight or ten feet each in length, into the mire and quicksand of the salt lick, and dipped the brine with a bucket and swape, as it oozed and seeped in through the sands below.

"In this crude, rough-and-ready way, Brooks managed to make about 150 pounds of salt per day, which he sold at the kettles, at eight to ten cents per pound. No means were used to settle or purify the brines or salt, as the salt water came from the gum, so it was boiled down to salt in the kettles, with whatever impurities or coloring matter it contained. As it issues from the earth it holds some carbonate of iron in solution; when it is boiled, this iron becomes oxidized, and gives a reddish tinge to the brine and salt.

"This Kanawha salt soon acquired a reputation for its strong, pungent taste, and its superior qualities for curing meat, butter, etc. A great

many who used it and recognized these qualities in connection with its striking reddish color, came to associate the two in their mind, in the relation of cause and effect, and orders used to come from far and near for some of 'that strong red salt from the Kanawha Licks.'

"Almost the only mode of transporting salt beyond the neighborhood, in those early days, was by pack-horses, on the primitive, back-woods pack-saddle. So much of this was done, and so familiar did the public mind become with the term, as used in that sense, that even to this day, among a large class of people, the verb 'to pack' is always used instead of other synonymous or similar terms, such as carry, transport, fetch, bring, take, etc., and the 'tote' of Old Virginia.

"It was not until 1806, that the brothers, David and Joseph Ruffner, set to work to ascertain the source of the salt water, to procure, if possible, a larger supply and of better quality, and to prepare to manufacture salt on a scale commensurate with the growing wants of the country.

"The Salt Lick, or 'The Great Buffalo Lick,' as it was called, was just at the river's edge, twelve or fourteen rods in extent, on the north side, a few hundred yards above the mouth of Campbell's creek, and just in front of what is now known as the 'Thoroughfare Gap,' through which, from the north, as well as up and down the river, the buffalo, elk, and other ruminating animals made their way in vast numbers to the Lick. I may mention *en passant* that so great was the fame of this lick, and the herds of game that frequented it, that the great hunter, explorer, and conqueror of the 'bloody ground' of Kentucky, Daniel Boone, was tempted up here, made a log cabin settlement, and lived just on the opposite side of the river, on what is now known as the Donally farm or Splint-coal bottom. I have had, from old Mr. Paddy Huddlestone, who died a few years ago, at nearly one hundred years of age, many interesting anecdotes of their joint adventures in hunting and trapping. Boone still lived here in 1789-90, when Kanawha county was formed, and in 1791 served as one of the delegates of the county in the Legislature at Richmond.

"But to return to the Lick, and the operations of the Ruffner Bros. In order to reach, if possible, the bottom of the mire and oozy quick-

sand through which the salt water flowed, they provided a straight, well-formed, hollow sycamore tree, with four feet internal diameter, sawed off square at each end. This is technically called a 'gum.' This gum was set upright on the spot selected for sinking, the large end down, and held in its perpendicular position by props or braces on the four sides. A platform, upon which two men could stand, was fixed about the top; then a swape erected, having its fulcrum in a forked post set in the ground close by. A large bucket, made from half a whisky barrel, was attached to the end of the swape, by a rope, and a rope attached to the end of the pole to pull down on, to raise the bucket. With one man inside the gum, armed with pick, shovel, and crowbar, two men on the platform on top empty and return the bucket, and three or four to work the swape, the crew and outfit were complete.

"After many unexpected difficulties and delays, the gum, at last, reached what seemed to be rock bottom at thirteen feet; upon cutting it with picks and crowbar, however, it proved to be but a shale or crust, about six inches thick, of conglomerated sand, gravel and iron. Upon breaking through this crust the water flowed up into the gum more freely than ever, but less salt.

"Discouraged at this result, the Ruffner Bros. determined to abandon this gum, and sink a well out in the bottom, about 100 yards from the river. This was done, encountering, as before, many difficulties and delays; when they had gotten through forty-five feet of alluvial deposit, they came to the same bed of sand and gravel upon which they had started, at the river.

"To penetrate this, they made a three and a half inch tube of a twenty foot oak log, by boring through it with a long shanked auger. This tube, sharpened, and shod with iron at the bottom, was driven down, pile-driver fashion, through the sand to the solid rock. Through this tube they then let down a glass vial with a string to catch the salt water for testing. They were again doomed to disappointment; the water, though slightly brackish, was less salt than that at the river. They now decided to return to the gum at the river, and, if possible, put it down to the bed rock. This they finally suc-

ceeded in doing, finding the rock at sixteen to seventeen feet from the surface. As the bottom of the gum was square, and the surface of the rock uneven, the rush of outside water into the gum was very troublesome. By dint of cutting and trimming from one side and the other, however, they were, at last, gotten nearly to a joint, after which they resorted to thin wedges, which were driven here and there as they would 'do the most good.' By this means the gum was made sufficiently tight to be so bailed out as to determine whether the salt water came up through the rock. This turned out to be the case. The quantity welling up through the rock was extremely small, but the strength was greater than any yet gotten, and this was encouraging. They were anxious to follow it down, but how? They could not blast a hole down there, under water; but this idea occurred to them; they knew that rock blasters drilled their powder holes two or three feet deep, and they concluded they could, with a longer and larger drill, bore a correspondingly deeper and larger hole.

"They fixed a long iron drill, with a two and a half inch chisel bit of steel, and attached the upper end to a spring pole, with a rope. In this way the boring went on slowly and tediously till, on the 1st of November, 1807, at seventeen feet in the rock, a cavity or fissure was struck, which gave an increased flow of stronger brine. This gave new encouragement to bore still further; and so, by welding an increasing length of shaft to the drill, from time to time, the hole was carried down to twenty-eight feet, where a still larger and stronger supply of salt water was obtained.

"Having now sufficient salt water to justify it, they decided, and commenced, to build a salt furnace; but while building, continued the boring; and on the 15th of January, 1808, at forty feet in the rock, and fifty-eight feet from the top of the gum, they were rewarded by an ample flow of strong brine for their furnace, and ceased boring.

"Now was presented another difficulty: how to get the stronger brine from the bottom of the well, undiluted by the weaker brines and fresh water from above? There was no precedent here; they had to invent, contrive, and construct anew. A metal tube would naturally suggest itself

to them ; but there were neither metal tubes, nor sheet metal, nor metal workers—save a home-made blacksmith—in all this region, and to bore a wooden tube forty feet long, and small enough in external diameter to go in the two and a half inch hole, was impracticable ; what they did do, was to whittle out of two long strips of wood, two long half tubes of the proper size, and, fitting the edges carefully together, wrap the whole from end to end with small twine ; this, with a bag of wrapping near the lower end, to fit, as nearly as practicable, water tight, in the two and a half inch hole, was cautiously pressed down to its place, and found to answer the purpose perfectly ; the brine flowed up freely through the tube into the gum, which was now provided with a water tight floor or bottom, to hold it ; and from which it was raised by the simple swape and bucket.

“ Thus was bored and tubed, rigged, and worked, the first rock-bored salt well west of the Alleghanies, if not the first in the United States. The wonder is not that it required eighteen months or more to prepare, bore and complete this well for use, but, rather, that it was accomplished at all under the circumstances. In these times, when such a work can be accomplished in as many days as it then required months, it is difficult to appreciate the difficulties, doubts, and general troubles that beset them then. Without preliminary study, previous experience or training, without precedents in what they undertook, in a newly settled country, without steam power, machine shops, skilled mechanics, suitable tools or materials, failure, rather than success, might reasonably have been predicted.

“ The new furnace, which for some time had been under construction, was now complete. It was simply a reproduction of the Elisha Brooks kettle furnace, on a larger scale. There were more kettles, of large size, and better arranged.

“ On the 8th of February, 1808, the Ruffner Bros. made their first lifting of salt from this furnace, and simultaneously reduced the price to the, then, unprecedentedly low figure of four cents per pound. From this time forward, salt making, as one of the leading industries of Kanawha, was an established fact, and Kanawha salt one of the leading commercial articles of the West ; and wherever it has gone, from the Alleghanies

to the Rocky mountains, from the Lakes to the Gulf, its superior qualities have been recognized and appreciated.

"The neighboring property owners, who had watched the progress and result of the Ruffner well with such deep interest, now instituted borings on their own lands, above and below, and on both sides of the river. Among these earlier, enterprising experimenters, were William Whitaker, Tobias Ruffner, Andrew Donnally, and others. All were more or less successful in getting a supply of brine, at depths varying from fifty to one hundred feet, and by 1817 there were some thirty furnaces and fifteen or twenty wells in operation, making in the aggregate 600,000 to 700,000 bushels of salt.

"In this year an important revolution in the manufacture of salt was effected by the discovery of coal. Although in one of the finest coal fields of the world, coal had not, hitherto, been found here in workable seams, nor had it been used at all, except for blacksmith purposes. Wood had been the only fuel used in salt making, and for other purposes, and all the bottoms and convenient hill-slopes for several miles up and down the river had been stripped of their timber to supply this demand.

"David Ruffner, true to the spirit of enterprise and pluck which bored the first well, was the first here to use coal as a fuel. This would appear to be a very simple matter now; but it was not so then. It was only after many months of discouraging efforts, and failing experiments, that he finally succeeded in getting it to work to his satisfaction. Its value established, however, its use was, at once, adopted by the other furnaces, and wood ceased to be used as a fuel for salt making in Kanawha.

"Other important improvements were gradually going on in the manner of boring, tubing and pumping wells, &c. The first progress made in tubing, after Ruffner's compound wood-and-wrapping-twine tube, was made by a tinner who had located in Charleston to make tin cups and coffee pots for the multitude. He made tin tubes in convenient lengths, and soldered them together as they were put down the well. The refinement of screw joints had not yet come, but followed shortly after, in connection with copper pipes, which soon took the place of tin, and these are recently giving place to iron.

"In the manner of bagging the wells, that is, in forming a water-tight joint around the tube to shut off the weaker waters above from the stronger below, a simple arrangement, called a 'seed-bag,' was fallen upon; which proved very effective; it has survived to this day, and has been adopted wherever deep boring is done, as one of the standard appliances for the purpose for which it is used. This seed-bag is made of buckskin, or soft calf-skin, sewed up like the sleeve of a coat or leg of a stocking; made twelve to fifteen inches long, about the size of the well hole, and open at both ends; this is slipped over the tube and one end securely wrapped over knots placed on the tube, to prevent slipping. Some six or eight inches of the bag is then filled with flax seed, either alone or mixed with powdered gum tragacanth; the other end of the bag is then wrapped, like the first, and the tube is ready for the well. When brought to their place—and they are put down any depth, to hundreds of feet—the seed and gum soon swell from the water they absorb, till a close fit and water-tight joint are made.

"The hydraulic contrivance for raising salt water from the gums, consisting of a bucket, a swape and a man, was simple, slow and sure; but the spirit of progress was abroad and it soon gave place to a more complicated arrangement, consisting of a pump, lever, crank, shaft, and blind horse or mule, that revolved in its orbit around the shaft. This was considered a wonderful achievement in mechanical contrivance, especially by the men who had worked the swapes. For several years this 'horse-mill,' as it was called, was the only mode of pumping salt water on Kanawha, but in the fullness of time it also went to the rear in 1818, and the steam engine came to the front, not only for pumping, but also for boring wells and various other uses.

"In 1831 William Morris, or 'Billy' Morris, as he was familiarly called, a very ingenious and successful practical well borer, invented a simple tool, which has done more to render deep boring practicable, simple and cheap, than anything else since the introduction of steam. Here this tool has always been called 'Slips,' but in the oil regions they have given it the name of 'Jars.' It is a long double-link, with jaws that fit closely, but slide loosely up and down. They are made of the best

eel, are about thirty inches long, and fitted, top and bottom, with pin and socket joint, respectively. For use they are interposed between the heavy iron sinker, with its cutting chisel-bit below, and the line of auger poles above. Its object is to let the heavy sinker and bit have a clear, quick, cutting fall, unobstructed and unencumbered by the slower motion of the long line of auger poles above. In the case of fast auger or other tools in the well, they are also used to give heavy jars upwards or downward, or both, to loosen them. From this use the oil-well people have given them the name of 'Jars.'

"Billy Morris never patented his invention, and never asked for nor made a dollar out of it, but as a public benefactor, he deserves to rank with the inventors of the sewing machine, reaping machine, planing machine, printing cylinders, cotton gin, &c.

"This tool has been adopted into general use wherever deep boring is done, but, outside of Kanawha, few have heard of Billy Morris, or know where the slips or jars came from.

"The invention of this tool, the adoption of the heavy sinker and some other minor improvements in well boring, gave a great impetus to deep boring in Kanawha. Wells were put down 500, 1,000, 1,500, and 1,800 feet, and one, the deepest in Kanawha, by Charles Reynolds, to about 2,000 feet. These borings would doubtless have been carried to a much greater depth, but that the fact soon got to be understood, that the salt-bearing strata had been passed, and that no brines were obtained to a greater depth than 800 to 1,000 feet. The limit of the salt-bearing rocks is readily told by the character of the borings. Within this limit are sandstones, shale, coal, &c., of the Coal Measures lying nearly horizontal, though dipping slightly to the north-west; below is the Carboniferous Limestone which underlies the Coal Measures, and crops out 100 miles to the eastward. This limestone, when penetrated, is known to the well-borers as the 'long running rock,' from the fact that a boring-bit will run a long time in it without being dulled.

"No regular suites of samples of borings from the Kanawha wells have ever been kept. This is not important, as the strata are well-known, and can be examined along the New river canon as they crop out to the eastward.



“The Kanawha borings have educated and sent forth a set of skillful well-borers, all over the country, who have bored for water for irrigation on the Western plains, for artesian wells for city, factory, or private use, for salt water at various places, for oil all over the country, for geological or mineralogical explorations, &c., &c.

“Nearly all the Kanawha salt wells have contained more or less petroleum oil, and some of the deepest wells a considerable flow. Many persons now think, trusting to their recollections, that some of the wells afforded as much as twenty-five to fifty barrels per day. This was allowed to flow over from the top of the salt cisterns, on the river, where, from its specific gravity, it spread over a large surface, and by its beautiful iridescent hues, and not very savory odor, could be traced for many miles down the stream. It was from this that the river received the familiar nickname of ‘Old Greasy,’ by which it was for a long time familiarly known by Kanawha boatmen and others.

“At that time this oil not only had no value, but was considered a great nuisance, and every effort was made to tube it out and get rid of it. It is now the opinion of some competent geologists, as well as of practical oil men, that very deep borings, say 2,500 feet, would penetrate rich oil-bearing strata, and possibly inexhaustible supplies of gas.

“In 1775, Gen. Washington visited the Kanawha Valley in person, and located some very valuable lands for his military services. About three miles above the Salt Lick, he set apart and deeded to the public, forever, a square acre of land near the river, on which was a great natural wonder, then little understood, called a ‘burning spring.’ For many, many years after, it was visited by every one who came to or passed through Kanawha, as one of the great curiosities of the region. It was simply a hole in the ground, which filled with water when it rained, and up through which issued a jet of gas, giving the water the appearance of boiling, and when lighted burned with a bright flame till blown out by high wind.

“In 1841, William Tompkins, in boring a salt well a short distance above the burning spring, struck a large flow of gas, which he turned to account by ‘boiling his furnace’ and making salt with it, effecting a great saving in fuel and economy in the cost of salt.

"In 1843, Messrs. Dickinson & Shrewsbury, boring a few rods below, tapped, at about 1,000 feet in depth, nature's great gas reservoir of this region. So great was the pressure of this gas, and the force with which it was vented through this bore-hole, that the auger, consisting of a heavy iron sinker, weighing some 500 pounds, and several hundred feet more of auger poles, weighing in all, perhaps 1,000 pounds, was shot up out of the well like an arrow out of a cross-bow. With it came a column of salt water, which stood probably 150 feet high. The roaring of this gas and water, as they issued, could be heard under favorable conditions for several miles.

"It would have been difficult to estimate with any approach to accuracy, the quantity of gas vented by this well, and no attempt was made to measure it. I have heard it roughly estimated as being enough to light London and Paris, with, perhaps, enough left to supply a few such villages as New York and Philadelphia. But as this is a *salt* well, as well as *gas* well, I suggest that the gas estimates be taken, '*cum grano salis*.'

"While this well was blowing it was the custom of the stage drivers, as they passed down by it, to stop and let their passengers take a look at the novel and wonderful display. On one occasion a Professor from Harvard College was one of the stage passengers, and being a man of an investigating and experimenting turn of mind, he went as near the well as he could get for the gas and spray of the falling waters, and lighted a match to see if the gas would burn. Instantly the whole atmosphere was ablaze, the Professor's hair and eye-brows singed, and his clothes afire. The well-frame and engine-house also took fire, and were much damaged. The Professor, who had jumped into the river to save himself from the fire, crawled out, and back to the stage, as best he could, and went to Charleston, where he took to bed, and sent for a doctor to dress his burns.

"Col. Dickinson, one of the owners of the well, hearing of the burning of his engine-house and well-frame sent for his man of affairs, Col. Woodyard, and ordered him to follow the unknown stage-passenger to town, get a warrant, and have him arrested and punished, for wilfully and wantonly burning his property,—'unless,' concluded Col. Dickinson,

as Woodyard was about starting, 'unless you find that the fellow is a natural d—d fool, and didn't know any better.' Arriving at Charleston, Woodyard went to the room of the burnt Professor at the hotel, finding him in bed, his face and hands blistered, and in a sorry plight generally. He proceeded to state, in very plain terms, the object of his visit, at which the Professor seemed greatly worried and alarmed, not knowing the extent of this additional impending trouble, which his folly had brought upon him. Before he had expressed himself in words, however, Woodyard proceeded to deliver, verbatim, and with great emphasis, the codicil to Dickinson's instructions. The Professor, notwithstanding his physical pain and mental alarm, seemed to take in the ludicrousness of the whole case, and with an effort to smile through his blisters, replied that it seemed a pretty hard alternative; but, under the circumstances, he felt it his duty to confess under the last clause, and escape. 'Well,' said Woodyard, 'if this is your decision, my duty is ended, and I bid you good morning.'

"The salt water and gas from this well were partially collected and conveyed through wooden pipes, to the nearest furnace, where they were used in making salt. For many years this natural flow of gas lifted the salt water 1,000 feet from the bottom of the well, forced it a mile or more through pipes, to a salt furnace, raised it into a reservoir, boiled it in the furnace, and lighted the premises all around at night. About the only objection to the arrangement was, that it did not lift the salt and pack it in barrels.

"The success of this well induced other salt makers to bore deep wells for gas, and several were successful. Messrs. Warth & English, Tompkins, Welch, & Co., Wm. D. Shrewsbury, J. H. Fry, and J. S. O. Brooks, bored gas wells and used the gas either alone, or in connection with coal for fuel in salt making. Gas was also struck in a few other wells, but did not last long, and was not utilized.

"The first flow of gas ever struck in Kanawha, was as far back as 1815, in a well bored by Captain James Wilson, within the present city limits of Charleston, near the residence of C. C. Lewis, Esq. The Captain had not gotten as good salt water as he expected; but instead of being dis-

couraged, he declared in language emphatic, that he would have better brine or bore the well into—lower regions, with higher temperature.

“Shortly after this the auger struck a cavity which gave vent to an immense flow of gas and salt water. The gas caught fire from a grate near at hand, and blazed up with great force and brilliancy, much to the consternation of the well-borers and others. Captain Wilson thought it would be a reckless tempting of Providence to go any deeper, and ordered the boring stopped. This well is now owned by the Charleston Gas Light Company, who, at some future time, contemplate re-opening it to test the gas for lighting the city.

“Of the many wells in the neighborhood, that have furnished gas, some have stopped suddenly, and some by a slow and gradual process. Whether these stoppages have been from exhaustion of the gas, or sudden or gradual stoppage of the vent-ways, has not been definitely determined. It is known, however, that in the Dickinson & Shrewsbury well, which blew longer than any other, the copper pipes in the well, and the wooden pipes leading to the furnace, were lined with a mineral deposit, in some places nearly closing them. This deposit has not been analyzed, but may possibly be silicate of lime. A system of torpedoing might break up these incrustations from the walls of the well and rock cavities, and start the gas again. From the results of such wells in Pennsylvania and New York, we have large encouragement to hope for similar results here. A few wells intelligently manipulated, might give gas enough to boil all the salt manufactured here, and run all the machinery in the neighborhood.

“After the introduction of steam power, and the use of coal for fuel, no striking change was effected in the process of salt manufacture for a number of years. What improvements were made, were simply in degrees. Wells were bored deeper, the holes were bored larger, the tubing was better, the pumps and rigging simpler. The furnaces were larger, better constructed, and more effectively operated, the quality of the salt improved and the quantity increased, but still they were kettle furnaces of the original type.

“The mammoth furnace of the kettle era was that of Joseph Friend

& Son, at the mouth of Campbell's creek, in which they made 100,000 bushels of salt per annum. The usual capacity of other furnaces was 25,000 to 50,000 bushels per annum. This was about the condition of the salt manufacture here in 1835, when there were, all told, about forty furnaces, producing annually about two millions of bushels of salt.

"During this year George H. Patrick, Esq., of Onondaga, New York, came here, to introduce a patent steam furnace. The furnace proper, after it was developed and improved, consisted of cast iron pans, or bottoms, eight to ten feet by three feet. Eight or ten of these pieces were bolted together by iron screws, forming one section twenty-four to thirty feet long by eight or ten feet wide. There were two, three, or four of these sections according to the size of the furnace. Over each of the sections was constructed a wooden steam chest, bolted to the flanges on the sides of the pans, and otherwise held together by wooden clamps and keys, and iron bolts and rods, all made steam and water-tight by calking. These several sections are set longitudinally on the furnace walls to form one continuous furnace.

"After the furnace, comes a series of wooden vats or cisterns, a usual size for which is about ten feet wide and one hundred feet long. The number of these cisterns varies according to the size of the furnace. They are constructed of poplar plank four to five inches thick, dressed to joints, and fitted in a frame of oak by sills and clamps. They are tightened by driving wooden keys, and then calked to make them water-tight. This system of clamping and keeping cisterns was introduced here from a model brought by Colonel B. H. Smith, from the navy yard at Norfolk. It was very simple and effective, and has been retained to this day, without improvement or change.

"There are two sets of these cisterns, the first in which the brines, after boiling in the furnace proper, are settled, and at the same time strengthened up to saturation. The latter in which the salt is graduated from the clear, saturated brines. These settling and graining cisterns are very much alike, except that the grainers are but fifteen to eighteen inches deep, while the settlers may be double that depth or deeper.

Through each and all of these cisterns, from end to end, are three rows of copper pipes, usually five inches in diameter.

"After the salt water is boiled in the furnace proper, it runs into these settling cisterns, and after being thoroughly settled and saturated, is drawn into the grainers, where the salt is deposited, and once in twenty-four hours is lifted out by long-handled shovels, on a salt-board suspended above the grainer, and from which, after proper draining, it is wheeled in wheel-barrows to a salt-house, where it is packed in barrels ready for shipment. The steam generated by the boiling in the furnace proper, is carried from the steam-chest, by wooden pipes, to the copper pipes and through the settlers and grainers. This steam giving up its heat in passing through these cisterns, keeps up the temperature of the brines, and causes rapid evaporation. The temperature of these cisterns varies from  $120^{\circ}$  to  $190^{\circ}$ —an average would probably be  $165^{\circ}$ .

"This, in short, is a description of the steam furnace after it was improved, and the first mistakes and crudities eliminated. In the first experiments only very slight heat was imparted by the steam to the brines, and only very coarse or alum salt made. It was very simple, but accomplished all that was expected; and so soon as it was fairly tested, improved up to its working condition, and its advantages demonstrated, the days of kettle furnaces were numbered.

"Andrew Donnally and Isaac Noyes were the first to try and adopt the plan. Then followed John D. Lewis, Lewis Ruffner, Frederick Brooks, and others, till all had made the change; and when the Ohio river furnaces were built, the system was fully adopted there. It is now about forty years since George Patrick introduced the steam furnace, but it still holds its position securely, and without a rival.

"Minor improvements have been made, and the furnaces much enlarged, but the general plan has not been changed. From the 2,000, 3,000, or 4,000 bushels per month of the earlier furnaces, the production has been increased to 20,000, 30,000, or 40,000 bushels per month. The writer's furnace, Snow Hill, has made in one year, independent of all stoppages, delays, etc., 420,000 bushels, the largest single month's run being 41,000 bushels. This furnace has 20,000 square feet of evaporat-

ing cistern surface, and over 1,300 square feet of metal-pan furnace surface. About 1,200 bushels of coal per day are consumed in the furnace proper, and about 300 more for engines, houses, and other purposes. How far this will be exceeded in the future remains to be seen.

"The same progress has occurred in freighting salt, as in the manufacture. In the days of Elisha Brooks, the neighbors took the salt from the kettles in their pocket handkerchiefs, tin buckets, or pillow cases. Later, it was taken in meal-bags, on pack-horses and pack-saddles.

"The first shipment west, by river, was in 1808, in tubs, boxes, and hogsheads, floated on a raft of logs. Next came small flat-boats, fifty to seventy-five feet long, and ten to eighteen feet wide, 'run' by hand, and in which salt was shipped in barrels. These boats increased in size up to one hundred and sixty feet or more in length, and twenty-four to twenty-five feet in width, and carried 1,800 to 2,200 barrels of salt.

"These boats were all run by hand, at great risk, and although the Kanawha boatmen were the best in the world, the boats and cargoes were not unfrequently sunk, entailing heavy loss upon the owners of the salt. The late Col. Andrew Donnally used to ask, when he heard of one of his boats sinking, whether any of the boatmen were drowned; if not, he contended it was not a *fair sink*. But all this is now done away with. Salt is now shipped eastward by rail, to the nearer western markets by daily and weekly steamboat packets, and to the more distant markets by tow-boats and barges. A tow-boat will now take 8,000 to 15,000 barrels at one trip, landing them at Louisville, Evansville, Nashville, Memphis, St. Louis, or elsewhere.

"In the matter of packages, no change has occurred here since the first use of barrels, the principal change being a gradual improvement in the quality of the cooperage. Our neighbors in Mason county ship some salt in bulk, and some in bags, but the larger portion in barrels. Kanawha uses barrels exclusively. We use two sizes—280 pounds and 350 pounds net salt, respectively. The pork-packing trade takes the larger size, and the retail trade, the smaller chiefly. These barrels are made of white-oak staves and hickory hoops, and it is believed that nothing cheaper or better can be devised for salt packages. They are

cheaper than bags, more convenient to handle, more convenient to store, and stand rougher usage and more exposure to the weather. Markets having choice of salt in bags or barrels, generally prefer the barrels.

"In the earlier times of salt making here, various substances were experimented with for the purpose of settling or separating the impurities from the brine. Blood, glue, jelly, lime, alum, etc., were used.

"Something of the sort was necessary when the brine was boiled down in kettles with all its impurities, but they are all useless, and worse than useless in the present process, and have been abandoned. Plenty of settle-room and plenty of time, are all that are needed to have the brines as clear as spring water. The bitters, after the salt is granulated, are thrown away, or used for other purposes.

"It has long been known that a small portion of some greasy or oily substance, on the surface of the brine, helped 'to cut the grain,' and hasten the granulation. Butter, tallow, lard, rosin, oils, etc., have been tried. Of these, butter is far the best, and next to butter, tallow; lard and some of the others are positively detrimental. What the action of butter is, whether chemical, or mechanical, or both, I think has never been determined, but certain it is, that a very small quantity of butter on the surface of brine, while it is granulating, very much improves the salt, making the grain finer and more uniform.

"Heat, too, is an important condition in making fine salt. The higher the temperature, other things being equal, the finer the salt. In making the finer grades of table and dairy salt, it is necessary to have the brine up to, or near, the boiling point. On the other hand, the coarser grades of salt, preferred for meat-packing and other purposes, are made at temperatures of from 100 to 150 F. A still coarser grained, or larger crystallized salt, known as alum salt or solar salt, and made in the open air by solar evaporation, is not made here, but there is no reason why it should not be to great advantage, as we have longer summers and warmer suns than at Onondaga, New York, where it is very largely made, and with more profit than other grades of salt.

"Some of the waste products from salt making are recently being utilized. Mr. Lerner, an enterprising German, is manufacturing bromine,



both here and at the Mason county furnaces from bitterns; and Mr. Leon Bemelmans, a Belgian chemist, is erecting works to manufacture hydrochloric acid from bitterns, and pigments from the impalpable oxide of iron which is deposited from salt-brines.

"The cost of manufacturing salt on Kanawha, varies, of course, from time to time, with the varying price of living, labor, and supplies. It also varies with each particular furnace according to size, and the greater or less advantages which it possesses. The larger the furnace, other things being equal, the cheaper it will make salt. The general superintendence and management of a large furnace costs very little, if any more, than for a small one; and a given quantity of coal will make more salt on a large than on a small furnace. The best furnace will make one hundred bushels of salt with eighty to ninety bushels of coal. A good average result is a bushel of salt for a bushel of coal, and the least economical furnaces consume about one hundred and twenty-five bushels of coal per one hundred bushels of salt.

"Some of the furnaces mine their own coal, and some buy fine or nut coal from mines that are shipping coal. Even the best furnaces do not use coal at all economically or to the best advantage. There is, in this respect, great room for improvement. The cost of coal, delivered at the furnaces, ranges from two and three-fourths to four cents per bushel. The present cost of barrels is twenty-five to twenty-eight cents for the smaller size, and twenty-eight to thirty-two cents for the larger. The cost of common day labor is \$1.00 to \$1.25 per day. Coal miners get two cents per bushel.

"The cost of producing salt at these figures may be stated at eight to eleven cents per bushel in bulk, or thirteen to sixteen cents in barrels, ready for shipment. The present cost of boring a salt-well here, say 1,000 feet, after engine, well frame, etc., are ready, is \$1,200 to \$1,500. The time necessary to bore and ream it complete, is sixty to ninety days. The cost of a salt furnace, complete, depends upon size, etc., and varies within wide limits. It may be stated roughly at \$40,000 to \$100,000.

"The people of the United States consume more salt than those of any other country, the estimated average consumption being one bushel

of fifty pounds, per capita, for the entire population. The great western markets, where our product goes, consume even more largely than the general average, as this is the largest pork-packing region on the globe. This portion of the country is rapidly increasing in population, and as rapidly in its meat crop and salt consumption.

"It is well known to chemists that salt is a valuable fertilizer on most soils for wheat, cotton, grass, potatoes, turnips, and other crops; and as an ingredient in compound manures, it has a wide range of value. It is often recommended by the highest authorities, but, as yet, very little is used in this country. When agriculture becomes better understood and practiced, and agricultural people understand their interests better, a large demand and consumption will doubtless be developed in that direction.

"The most important and prospectively promising development in the manufacture of salt here, is its probable use on a large scale in the manufacture of alkalies and other chemicals having salt as a basis or important constituent.

"With a population of 40,000,000, and covering the greater part of a continent, it is an astonishing fact that our last census does not report a single Soda Ash works in operation in the United States, while the official returns show the importation of these chemicals into the country to be enormously large.

"In 1872 the importation of soda ash, caustic soda, etc., was over 100,000 tons; in 1873, 118,000 tons; and in 1874, 140,000 tons.

"These figures, together with the following article, taken from the New York Tribune a few years ago, are strikingly suggestive and instructive, and present, in a very forcible manner, the great and rapidly growing importance of this manufacture to this country:

"'Soda ash, within ten days, has gone up one-half cent a pound. Well, what of that? Just this: For the bread we Americans eat, for the window glass that lights our houses, and in fact shelters us from the weather, for every pound of hard soap that we use, for every sheet of our letter, cap, and printed paper, for the bleaching of our cotton cloths, and very many other blessings, we are absolutely dependent upon Great

Britain. Her manufactories of soda ash have the monopoly of furnishing the United States with that article, indispensably necessary in itself, and in its correlative products, to the supply of the commonest wants of our social and domestic life. There is not a soda ash manufactory in the United States.

“There are the skeletons of many, killed dead under a competition under Free Trade Tariffs, or Free Trade clauses in Protective Tariffs, which represents the difference of wages paid to common laborers in the United States and Great Britain, fifty cents a day there, and \$1.50 a day here. But there is not a single living, kicking soda ash factory in our whole country. Let us re-state this, our Nation's dependence. If a war should break out between Great Britain and the United States, we would be instantly cut off from the supply of the materials to make bread, soap, glass, and paper. The manufacturing interests, dependent upon soda ash and its correlations, would forthwith be brought to the greatest distress, or to absolute ruin. So soon as the imported stock on hand was exhausted, we should have to depend on blockade running to obtain the chemical element necessary to enable the Nation to wash its clothes and raise its bread and cakes. In the event of such a war, soda ash would go up to \$2.00 per pound, indeed it could not be gotten at any price. Our people would expiate with widespread distress their folly in not having encouraged and established this article of prime and indispensable necessity, at least to the point of independence from foreign supply.

“But soda ash has gone up one-half cent a pound. It is a new fluctuation, which we simply wish to employ in urging the solemn duty to make this nation independent of Great Britain, for the comfort of its social and domestic life. The fluctuation in the price of soda ash in 1865 was between three and a half and twelve and a half cents per pound. During that time, the profit the British manufacturers and importers made out of us, ranged between 200 and 400 per cent. Money enough was sent out of this country, to pay inordinate profits to foreigners, to have paid for the successful establishment here of the soda ash manufacture in at least eight different States, and to have secured a permanently low and steady price of the article in all the American markets. This rise

of one-half cent a pound, a British tax on every glass, soap, paper, and cotton manufacturer in this country, will not excite a protest. How wise it would be for these manufacturers, quitting forever their chronic protests against a tariff on soda ash, to unite in demanding one that should immediately establish the manufacture here, and save them forever from those inevitable fluctuations in the price of the foreign article, and the extravagant profits from which only home competition between established producers, saves the consumer.'

"All, or nearly all, of our supply of these chemicals comes from Great Britain. Official reports of 1870, giving the operations of 1869, will give an idea of the extent and importance of the manufacture in that country. In that year the manufactories there consumed 10,184,000 bushels of salt; 26,908,000 bushels, or 961,000 tons of coal; 281,000 tons of limestone and chalk; 264,000 tons of pyrites; 8,300 tons of nitrate of soda, and 33,000 tons of timber for casks. The manufacture, I am told, has largely increased since 1869, but I have not seen official reports of a later date.

"Is there any sufficient reason why this manufacture should be so neglected and ignored in this country? On the contrary, the advantages are so great and so palpable that it is difficult to understand why capital and enterprise have not been enlisted in it. To illustrate, compare the conditions of manufacture at New Castle, on the Tyne, the seat of the largest manufacture in England, with what they would be on the Kanawha.

"The New Castle manufacturer buys his salt in Cheshire and transports it several hundred miles by rail. He buys his coal from neighboring collieries, paying railway transportation on that to his works. His pyrites and manganese come from Spain, and his timber for casks from Canada or Norway. When the chemicals are made, he sends them to Liverpool or Glasgow by rail for American shipment, thence by steamers to New York, paying ocean freight, insurance, and government duty. At New York he pays commission, cartage, etc., and thence railroad freight to the Western markets, say to Pittsburgh, St. Louis, etc.

"Per contra, the Kanawha manufacturer would have salt and coal at his door, at a small margin over producer's cost, if he did not produce

them himself at actual cost. On the line of the Chesapeake and Ohio railroad, accessible, cheap and convenient, are inexhaustible mines and beds of superior pyrites, manganese and limestone, and timber of the finest qualities abounds throughout the region, and is extremely cheap. The product, when ready, could be rolled from one door of the factory into boats or barges, and in a short time, by cheap water transportation, be landed at these same large western consuming markets from Pittsburgh to St. Louis, inclusive; or from the opposite door of the factory, on the cars of the Chesapeake and Ohio railroad, for early delivery into any of the eastern cities.

"It will be readily seen, I think, that the advantages are greatly in favor of the American manufacture, and especially in Kanawha, where there are, probably, more advantages combined than at any other point in the country. With cheap salt, cheap coal, cheap sulphurets, cheap manganese, cheap limestone, cheap timber, cheap labor, and cheap transportation, there is nothing lacking but capital to make the Kanawha the Tyne of America.

"West Virginia should at least supply soda ash, caustic soda, and bleaching powder, to the great chemical consuming markets of the west, so near and cheaply accessible to us, if not, indeed, to the whole continent, thus saving to the consumers millions of dollars of extra cost for the foreign article, and saving the country from the risk of the unpleasant contingencies described in the foregoing Tribune article. The inauguration of this industry here on a large scale, it is believed, would promote other enterprises depending largely upon these products as well as upon cheap coal and cheap timber.

"Glass works, soap factories, paper mills, etc., might, with advantage, be located here convenient to salt and chemical supplies. The products of these establishments would, of course, have the same advantages of cheaply reaching the great consuming and rapidly growing markets of the West.

"The Great Kanawha Coal Field, within which lies the Kanawha salt basin, is one of the finest known coal fields in the world. We have coal of the finest qualities—splint, bituminous, and cannel; hard block coal,

suitable for iron making ; soft, rich coal for gas ; good coking coal ; steam coal and grate coal. Our cannel coals, for parlor use or gas making, are unexcelled. Iron ores, carbonates of the coal formation, are found throughout the region, red and brown hematites and specular ores are cheaply accessible by rail, and black band of superior quality is found here in large abundance. As a timber region, especially for the hard woods, this can hardly be excelled on the continent.

"It is not my purpose, however, in this chapter, to describe the coal, iron or timber ; they have been mentioned in another place ; but I desire, simply in a few words, to call attention to the conjunction, or convenient proximity, of these great leading staple raw materials, herein described or mentioned ; and all on a great line of railroad and a navigable river, connecting with all the 16,000 miles of water-ways draining the interior of the continent into the "Great Father of Waters," the Mississippi ; and reaching the teeming millions of population who dwell upon its fertile shores to their farthest limits. It is upon such valuable staple raw materials as I have named, and so favorably located as they are here, that communities and nations found their industries, and build their wealth.

"I will not undertake to give any detailed description of the geology of this salt basin ; to do so, would be to give the geology of the Appalachian coal field. The strata here, are simply the usual strata of the coal measures, lying nearly horizontal, and saturated in an unusual degree with valuable brines.

"Pure salt, or chloride of sodium, is the same under all circumstances, but no commercial salt is entirely pure. Sea water, brine springs, rock salt, and all sources of commercial supply contain, associated with common salt, other saline ingredients. These are chiefly sulphurets and chlorides, in greater or less quantity, and varying proportions. Probably the most common, as well as the most deleterious of these compounds, is sulphate of lime. Our salt has the advantage of being absolutely free from lime and other sulphates ; our process of manufacture, perhaps better than any other, enables us to separate the hurtful compounds and purify the brines.

"The salt, when made, analyzes 98 to 99 per cent. of pure chloride of sodium, the remaining fraction being made up of chlorides of magnesium, and calcium. These absorb a little moisture from the atmosphere, relieve the salt from a chappy dryness, and impart to it that valuable property of penetrating and curing meat in any climate or weather, for which it has so long enjoyed a high reputation. In fact the distinctive characteristics of Kanawha salt may be stated as follows :

" 1st. It has a more lively, pungent, and pleasant taste as a table salt, than any other known.

" 2nd. It is the only commercial salt that is absolutely free from sulphate of lime.

" 3rd. It does not, under any condition of climate and weather, cake or crust on the surface of the meat, but penetrates it and cures it thoroughly to the bone, so that in large pork-packing establishments in Cincinnati and elsewhere, it is found to save meat in very unfavorable weather, where with any other salt known or used, the meat would have been injured.

" 4th. On account of its pungency and penetrating qualities, a less quantity of it will suffice for any of the purposes for which it is used—whether table, dairy, grazing or packing.

" Certificates from numerous Western firms show that the Mason county salt quotes with this ; though at the same price consumers prefer that from the Kanawha wells.

" There are in this salt district about 120 salt wells, all told. Some of these being inferior, have been abandoned, and will probably never be used again. Others are good wells, the furnaces connected with which, have been dismantled by 'dead rents,' or other causes. These furnaces may be re-built, and re-started. The good wells, if all run, would supply brine for about 5,000,000 bushels of salt per year. Each furnace requires three to five wells.

" There are at present ten furnaces here, of which the following is a list, with name of furnace, name of owner, and capacity. The aggregate capacity is about 2,500,000 bushels per year, if all were run full time. Two of the furnaces, however, are not in repair, and some others which

men idle, have only recently been repaired, hence the product of was very small.

It follows a list of furnaces and their proprietors, with the amount produced yearly by each from 1797 to 1876:

LIST OF KANAWHA SALT FURNACES.

Name of Furnace,	Name of Owner.	Product's Capacity. Bushels.	Remarks.
Boone.....	W. B. Brooks.....	300,000	
Ben.....	W. D. Shrewsbury.....	280,000	
Bill.....	J. P. Hale.....	420,000	Not in repair.
Don.....	J. D. Lewis.....	230,000	
.....	Gen. L. Ruffner.....	180,000	Not in repair.
.....	J. Q. Dickinson.....	210,000	
Springs.....	Mrs. R. Tompkins.....	160,000	
.....	Mrs. S. Dickinson.....	240,000	
.....	Splint Coal Company.....	240,000	
.....	Splint Coal Company.....	240,000	
		2,500,000	

STATEMENT SHOWING THE PRODUCTION OF SALT IN KANAWHA.

Date	Bushels.	Date.	Bushels.
.....	150 pounds per day.	1850.....	3,142,100 bushels per year.
.....	25 bushels per day.	1851.....	2,862,676 " " "
.....	600,000 bushels per year	1852.....	2,741,570 " " "
.....	787,000 " " "	1853.....	2,729,910 " " "
.....	863,542 " " "	1854.....	2,233,863 " " "
.....	989,758 " " "	1855.....	1,493,548 " " "
.....	906,132 " " "	1856.....	1,264,049 " " "
.....	956,814 " " "	1857.....	1,266,749 " " "
.....	1,029,207 " " "	1858.....	} No records.
.....	1,288,873 " " "	1859.....	
.....	1,702,956 " " "	1860.....	
.....	1,960,583 " " "	1861.....	
.....	1,762,410 " " "	1862.....	
.....	1,880,415 " " "	1863.....	} 1,300,991 bushels per year.
.....	1,811,076 " " "	1864.....	
.....	1,593,217 " " "	1865.....	
.....	1,419,205 " " "	1866.....	
.....	1,443,645 " " "	1867.....	
.....	1,919,389 " " "	1868.....	1,528,282 " " "
.....	2,197,887 " " "	1869.....	1,822,430 " " "
.....	1,874,919 " " "	1870.....	1,721,963 " " "
.....	2,578,499 " " "	1871.....	} No records.
.....	3,224,786 " " "	1872.....	
.....	2,600,087 " " "	1873.....	
.....	2,876,010 " " "	1874.....	
.....	2,951,492 " " "	1875.....	967,465 bushels per year.



## CHAPTER XX.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

**Judge Lewis Summers**—Born in Fairfax County, Virginia—Removes to Gallipolis, Ohio, in 1808—Comes to Kanawha in 1804—Elected to the House of Delegates—Elected Judge in 1819—His great services as a member of the Board of Public Works—His eminent services in Convention of 1829, etc.—Judge George W. Summers—His great powers as an orator—His success as a lawyer and politician—Is elected to the Lower House of Congress—His defeat for Governor—He raises his voice for the Union in 1861—Isaac Noyes, the humble and devoted Christian—His remarkable life, and his general usefulness—Strange circumstance of his conversion, etc.—Col. B. H. Smith, the able jurist—His long and laborious life in the Kanawha Valley—His character as a citizen and lawyer—Dr. Spicer Patrick—A brief sketch of his life—Hon. Greenbury Slack, the self-made legislator from Elk river—Brief Personal Sketches, etc., etc.

A history of Kanawha would be imperfect, indeed, if it did not contain biographical sketches of a number of distinguished and honorable gentlemen residents of the county. Of course, I can notice but a few, however much I might desire to give extended sketches of a very large number of my fellow-citizens, living and dead. I shall, therefore, begin this chapter with the late

## JUDGE LEWIS SUMMERS.

Judge Summers was born in Fairfax county, Virginia, November 7, 1778, of a highly respectable parentage. He was one of the greatest men Virginia ever produced, when the two Virginias were one. He entered upon an active public career during the Presidency of the elder Adams, and from the outset took rank as a man of unusual foresight. With the ardor that distinguished the Virginia youth at the time Judge Summers made his *debut* in political life, he used his influence to achieve the civic victory which bore Thomas Jefferson into the Presidential office; and through a long and useful life he adhered to the political principles of his younger days with undeviating constancy.

In 1808, realizing the vastness of the resources of the western border, he moved to Gallipolis, Ohio, and began the practice of the law, for which profession he had previously prepared himself by a thorough education. Shortly after his settlement at that point, he was elected to the State Senate, and served several terms with marked distinction. His usual common sense, and the deliberate judgment with which he had been so large-endowed by nature, fitted him for a law-maker and a leader. Such men are always sought after by the people to fill the important offices at their disposal. Judge Summers, although of an unassuming nature, was nearly always kept in office; oftentimes, however, against his will.

In 1814 he took up his permanent residence in this county. Bringing with him back to Virginia a large fund of legislative knowledge and experience, he had little more than become a citizen of the State, when his fellow-citizens called upon him to serve as representative in the legislature of Virginia, in the Assembly of 1817. In 1818 he was re-elected, and in February, 1819, he was chosen one of the Judges of the General Court, and a Judge of the Kanawha Judicial Circuit, which position he filled with great acceptability to all the people, as was evinced by their keeping him on the bench almost constantly thereafter. For a long time he was a member of the Board of Public Works of the State, in which position he did the entire county great service. He was very active in his efforts to carry through the James River and Kanawha Canal; and while it was generally pronounced a physical impossibility to construct a canal through the canyons of the Alleghany mountains, it is said that Judge Summers never faltered in his efforts to make the trial; at least, always claiming that nothing was impossible, and that it was only a matter of time for the construction of a canal and a railroad along the present line of the Chesapeake and Ohio railroad. He clearly saw the necessity for these great internal improvements, and always assured the people that they would some day be constructed. He was right. It was, he said three-quarters of a century ago, only a matter of time; and now, where it was then considered almost impossible for the wild deer to find his way through the great canyons of the New river Valley, the locomotive makes its thirty miles per hour, east and west, both day

and night ; and along the same Valley a canal will be constructed before another generation passes from the stage of action.

In 1829 Judge Summers was elected a member of the Convention to revise the Constitution of Virginia. In that memorable assembly the sterling, vigorous, and practical character of the Judge's mind made him, before the close of its deliberations, one of the most useful members of that illustrious body. As the able champion of the true principles of elective government, he, in that assembly, performed services and acquired a reputation which will ever cause his memory to be cherished with warm and respectful affection by the people of the western portion of the State.

As a Judge, he was most able and faithful. As a lawyer, he had but few equals. As a statesman, his efforts were perseveringly directed to the best interests of his country. As a citizen, he was loved and respected by all who knew him. In all the different relations of life, his own strong, original, and vigorous mind has been indelibly impressed upon the times and events with which he was connected.

Judge Summers died at the White Sulphur Springs, in Greenbrier county, August 27, 1843, after having been for more than a quarter of a century one of the Judges of the General Court of Virginia. His remains were interred on the Summers' farm, at Walnut Grove, on the Kanawha river, a short distance below the mouth of Pocatalico river.

JUDGE GEORGE W. SUMMERS, A. M.

In my humble opinion George William Summers was the most gifted man that Virginia ever produced. He possessed naturally nearly every gift that serves to make the great statesman, and illustrious citizen. His powers as an orator were equal to Henry or Lee, and his stalwart frame afforded him that which is lacking in so many of our statesmen—physical force. He was about five feet ten inches tall, and weighed about two hundred and fifty pounds. His head was proportionately as large as his body, and while in his presence, without even hearing him speak, you were impressed with the fact that you were looking upon a great man.

He was born in Fairfax county, Virginia, March 4, 1807. His par-

nts removed with him to Kanawha while he was yet an infant. He matriculated as a student in the classical course at the Ohio University, at Athens, in 1819, and graduated from that institution in 1826, taking the degree of Master of Arts three years thereafter. He then commenced the study of law under his brother, Judge Lewis Summers, and was admitted to the bar in 1827. In 1830 he was elected a member of the House of Delegates from Kanawha county, and was continued in that capacity for a number of years. He was elected to the House of Representatives in the Spring of 1841, and was re-elected in 1843, serving throughout the twenty-seventh and twenty-eighth Congresses. While in Congress he always commanded the attention of the entire body whenever he attempted to speak, and invariably acquitted himself creditably, and acquired new laurels as an orator and debater. In 1850 he was elected to the Constitutional Convention, and occupied a leading position in framing the Constitution of that year. In that Convention he delivered a speech on the Basis of representation, which was pronounced the greatest effort of his life. In 1851 he was unanimously nominated as the Whig candidate for Governor, at the first election of Governor by the people, that officer having previously been chosen by the Legislature. In this contest he was defeated by Hon. Joseph Johnson, of Harrison county, the Democratic nominee. The contest was close and exciting, and was one of the most interesting campaigns ever conducted in Virginia. In May, 1852, he was elected Judge of the Eighteenth Judicial Circuit of Virginia; and after serving six years in that capacity, he resigned his office July 1, 1858, there being two years of the time unexpired for which he had been elected.

In 1861 he was elected to the celebrated Peace Conference which was held in Washington in that year; and while he was in attendance upon that body, he was elected by his fellow-citizens in Kanawha a delegate to the Richmond Convention, which passed the ordinance of secession. The Judge, however, voted against it, and made one of the ablest speeches on that subject that was made in that memorable Convention. His great speech in favor of the Union in the Richmond Convention, of 1861, was published in the Richmond Whig, occupying over one-half of that

large newspaper. I very much regret that no member of the Judge's family preserved a copy of the paper, as his speech was well worthy of preservation.

After the breaking out of the war, Judge Summers retired to private life upon his farm at the western limit of Charleston, and persistently refused to accept every office tendered him by his friends and fellow-citizens. He, however, in his retirement from public life, kept up the practice of his profession, which was large and lucrative, as he almost invariably had one side of all important cases. He was always considered the ablest advocate at the Kanawha Bar, which ranked second to none in the State; and it is said of him that he could make a jury believe anything and everything he told them. I have, myself, seen the Judge, jury, and nearly every one in the court-house weeping, while Judge Summers was making a pathetic appeal in defense of a man charged with murder. He always depended upon his oratorical powers to force his way out of a bad case, and he generally succeeded. He was an irresistible power in nearly all of his cases, hence his success in the legal profession, and in fact in everything he undertook.

By industry and frugality he acquired a large estate, which he left to his only son, Lewis Summers, who now resides upon the old homestead so long occupied by his father, one mile west of Charleston. The war very much disturbed the Judge, as he not only regretted, but really suffered to see his country distracted—father arrayed against son, and brothers embrewing their hands in brother's blood. It was enough to distract any man who loved the land that gave him birth, and who was interested in its preservation and prosperity. He scarcely ever left his farm during the entire war, except to attend Court at Charleston; and for several months before his death, which took place in September, 1868, he suffered from mental aberration, which finally caused his death.

Judge Summers was a worthy citizen, a distinguished lawyer, an able Judge, a great statesman, and an humble Christian. He wielded an influence in the Valley of his adoption, second to no other man who lived before or after him, and his death was mourned by thousands of his countrymen. He was buried beside his wife and brother at Walnut Grove,

on the Kanawha, where his ashes will remain in dreamless sleep forever.

## ISAAC NOYES.

For nearly three-quarters of a century, Isaac Noyes was a citizen of the Kanawha Valley, and during all that time he maintained an upright and consistent life. He was born in Columbia county, New York, May 12, 1785; came to Kanawha in 1804; married Cynthia Morris, daughter of the elder "Billy" Morris, in 1807; engaged in the fur business, and made money rapidly; afterwards became a salt manufacturer, and at last a merchant. In all of these different occupations he was quite successful. After a business career of about fifty years, he retired from active life in 1848, having amassed a large fortune.

In 1828 he became religious, and, after his retirement from business, devoted his entire time to the service of his Master—actually living in constant communion with God. From the time of his conversion, he gave a large portion of his time and means in spreading and building up the cause of Christianity in the community in which he lived, but after his retirement from business, he seemed to care for nothing else but the spiritual advancement of all those with whom he associated.

He was one of the most devoted husbands I ever knew. To his dying day his attentions to, and care for his wife, were rendered and manifested with all the delicacy, politeness, and tenderness of a lover. His wife for nearly fifty years—they lived together as man and wife over sixty-four years—was a confirmed invalid. In the year 1828, as now recollected, Mr. Noyes was advised that there was little or no hope for her life, and the only possible relief she could secure would be by spending some months in New Orleans. In that year he left with her for that city. As he was the best nurse she could have, and he expected to devote his whole time to her, no one went with them. The family bade their mother farewell as if it were the last time they expected to see her alive.

They arrived safely at New Orleans. After some time spent in the city, do not know how long, the yellow fever broke out in a violent form. In the panic which prevailed it was almost impossible to secure food, certainly no personal attentions from any one. Unable to get away, with no help,

with no comforts for his sick wife, although he had most ample means, and with death all around them, despair almost took possession of him.

Mr. Noyes was always a kind man, and had for a large portion of his life been a worldly man, rejoicing in all sorts of amusements, and full of business. He had little or no religious impression, and had passed his life out of the reach of Church or religious privileges. With no purpose in his mind, except to escape the pain of looking at his sick wife, whom he could not help, and whom he feared was at death's door, he went upon the house-top, then, and perhaps now, arranged for use as a place to seek the fresh air above the miasma of the swamps. He used to say, that while there, it suddenly came into his mind to pray; a duty he had never before performed. It was a sudden impulse,—he followed it as suddenly and promptly. He knelt down right then, and prayed with an earnestness which nothing but trouble can give. He plead for help for himself and for his wife, and humbled himself in the deepest anguish. He said when he arose from his knees his heart was at peace with God. He felt that they were in God's hands, and that He would surely lead them safely home; and he rejoiced in a new and firm belief in God, and in Christ his Saviour.

He went down to his room, and everything seemed changed. He began preparations for his return. In a short time he left New Orleans, with his wife, and reached home, in safety.

All the way on that long, tedious trip, he was rejoicing in his new life, and only anxious lest he should not reach home alive, so as to be able to tell the story of salvation to his friends in Charleston. I have heard him say that his idea was, that he would only have to tell his friends about it, and they would, of course, come to Christ at once. He felt that no one could possibly refuse to come, if they only knew what Christ had done for him.

Immediately upon reaching home, he went to work, visiting all his old friends and associates in business—Colonel Donnally, Brayton Allen, Bradford Noyes, and other salt manufacturers in the Valley, and never realized how hardened the human heart is, until he saw how few heeded or cared for his story of Christ's love.

He at once put his business in order, to attend to his religious convictions and labors. Subordinating business to religious duty, he bought a lot in Charleston, the land between Broad and Brooks streets, from river to hill, except the Miller and Summers lots, built the house in which Colonel T. B. Swann now lives, and moved to town at once so as to be near the church. He owned the house now used as a laundry, and the space between it and the house above; and on this space he built a prayer-meeting house, which was used for that purpose a great many years. It was afterwards moved to what is now the Southern Presbyterian Church lot, and was placed just below the church. It was again removed, and is now the front part of Mr. R. Walls' residence, opposite the Episcopal church.

He was, soon after his conversion, elected an Elder of the Presbyterian Church in this city, and being quite a musician, led the choir, and for a considerable time played the bass viol as an accompaniment; but about 1830 he bought an organ, and, to the great annoyance of some of the members—Colonel David Ruffner among them—placed it in the church and used it. This was either the first or second organ introduced into a Presbyterian church in the State of Virginia. He successfully led the choir—his daughter, Mrs. B. H. Smith, playing the organ—for many years, indeed, until age weakened his control over his voice, when he gave it over to the management of another.

He was devoted to Sabbath-school work, and was seldom absent from this class of exercises. In the latter part of his life, when his memory became defective, he would go down to the church on week days, in hopes of finding the Sabbath-school in session, and would seem sadly disappointed when he would discover his mistake.

He was a *working* Christian, doing all that his hands could find to do. He was an humble Christian; although he could read very little, and was almost an uneducated man, he always prayed in public when called upon, and if not with elegant language, always with an unction, faith, and earnestness that comforted all who heard and joined with him. He never wavered in his fidelity or faith, and went down to his grave in perfect peace with God and all mankind.



In memory of the place of his conversion, he placed upon the top of the house which he built in Charleston, a large box-shaped structure about 6x10 feet, entirely open at the top, and boxed up all around with tongued and grooved plank, about four feet high. This was his place for daily private prayer, often used within my recollection. It has been removed only within the past ten or twelve years.

He departed this life in Charleston, September 14, 1871, and his funeral was one of the largest ever seen in the county, all of the other churches of the city were closed, and the different congregations assembled at the Presbyterian church, and in the most solemn manner paid their last tribute of respect to this venerable citizen.

HON. BENJAMIN H. SMITH, A. M.

The genealogy of the Smith family would be an interesting subject. It shall, however, be my province at this time to give only a brief biographical sketch of Colonel B. H. Smith, who has, for so many years, been prominently before the people of Kanawha county; and in doing so, it becomes necessary to briefly refer to his family history, in order to show from whence he sprang.

Daniel Smith lived about two miles north of Harrisonburg, Rockingham county, Virginia, on the Valley road. The ruins of the old house were standing in 1852, and perhaps are standing yet. His children were John, father of Judge Smith, Daniel, Joseph, Benjamin, father of Colonel B. H. Smith, the subject of this sketch, James, and others whose names are not remembered.

Eight of these sons were in the Revolutionary army, and were present at the surrender of Cornwallis, at Yorktown. Benjamin was a Lieutenant, Daniel and John were older, and held higher ranks in the army. After they returned home the camp fever broke out among them, and several of them died. Daniel Smith was a Captain at the battle of Point Pleasant - Benjamin Harrison, a grand-uncle, was also Captain of a company in that historic battle. It was always regarded as a great matter of pride in the family, that General Washington stopped over night with Daniel Smith, on one of his trips up the Valley.

Benjamin Smith was executor of his father's estate, and James Monroe, afterwards President of the United States, was his advising attorney in the matter.

John Smith, who was a Captain in the English army, was the father of Daniel Smith, Sr. He had charge of the forts in the Valley of Virginia during the French and Indian war. In the fort at Pattonsburg, now in Botetourt county, after a desperate fight with a body of French and Indians, he capitulated with honorable terms. The French, however, were so exasperated, upon entering the fort, to see how small the garrison was, that they violated the articles of capitulation, and Captain Smith was made prisoner. After successfully running the gauntlet, he was taken to New Orleans, thence to Paris, and was exchanged and sent to England, from whence, after many years, he found his way back to Virginia and lived and died at the house of his son Daniel, in the Shenandoah Valley. He was a very old man when the Revolutionary war began, and was very angry at being denied a command in the Patriot army. He was a brave soldier, and was devoted to his adopted country.

Colonel Benjamin H. Smith was born October 31, 1797, in Rockingham county, Virginia, on Cook's creek, a few miles from Harrisonburg, on the Staunton road. He removed to Pleasant run, a branch of Hockhocking river, about four miles from Lancaster, Fairfield county, Ohio, September 4, 1810.

His father and some of his friends, William Cravens, Dr. Harrison, and others, of Rockingham county, became conscientious about holding slaves. His father liberated all of his slaves, making them free at twenty-five years of age. He then determined to remove to a Western State, where labor was respectable, and did so, taking with him all his slaves who were over twenty-five years old, and all under that age, who chose to go; of the latter only one or two remained in Rockingham. His father and friends were strong Methodists. Their house, on Cook's creek, was the stopping place of all the Methodist ministers who passed that way, and was known as an "open house" among the Methodists in all the States. Scarcely a night passed for many years that there was not a Methodist minister under its shelter.

Colonel Smith attended school in Harrisonburg, taught by old Mr. Clark, who instructed in the English branches only. For three years he attended this school, walking back and forth to Harrisonburg each day. After his removal to Ohio he attended school a short time. In 1812 the exigencies of the situation demanded his labor on the farm, and until 1815 he worked continually at that business; a portion of the time having almost the entire management of the farm.

In the time of the "old field schools" of Virginia, "flogging" was the frequent, and almost the only remedy for all troubles, and the Colonel received his full share, which gave him a great aversion to books; for he could not keep from associating whippings with books. His father urged upon him the importance of acquiring a thorough education, but laboring under the prejudice alluded to, he refused to consider the question seriously. In the autumn of 1815, while harvesting corn, he cut his knee severely, in consequence of which he was confined to the house for a number of weeks. During this season of confinement, an old book entitled "Think's I to Myself," fell into his hands; and beginning to read it, he became deeply interested, and never stopped until he had finished it. Having in this way become interested in reading, he wrote a note to Judge Irwin, one of his neighbors, asking the loan of some books as interesting as "Think's I to Myself." The Judge kindly sent "Roderick Random," "Don Quixote," and several other entertaining books, that were soon read, giving him a love and desire for reading. In the course of his reading he met with numerous classical allusions and quotations which he did not understand; and being thus made conscious of the disadvantages under which he was laboring, he determined to secure a collegiate education. His father gladly sympathized with this purpose, and in December, 1815, being advised thereto by Thomas Ewing, Sr., he entered the Ohio University, at Athens, and remained there four years. Through his entire college course, he studied with great perseverance and industry. He was older than most of the students, and being a tall, over-grown young man, was diffident and backward, as compared with smaller and younger boys, which caused him to apply himself more earnestly to his studies,

All the time he resided in Ohio he possessed a desire and determination to make his home in his native State—Virginia—the home of his childhood, where nearly all of his friends and relatives resided.

After graduating, he returned to Lancaster, Ohio, and studied law for two and a half years with Hon. Thomas Ewing, Sr. Mr. Ewing recommended Charleston, Virginia, as a favorable place to begin practice; and accordingly Colonel Smith visited Charleston in February, 1822, and although not kindly treated by a portion of the people, yet he resolved to begin the practice of law here, being the more firmly fixed in this purpose because of the spirit of unfriendliness then manifested. He immediately returned to Lancaster to make all necessary arrangements, and on March 27, 1822, he again arrived at Charleston, and opened his law office at once.

The salt business of the Valley occasioned close commercial relations with many citizens of Ohio and Kentucky, and in a short time Colonel Smith, by his industry and perseverance, won the confidence of a number of these persons; so that at the Spring term of the Court of 1823 he brought about sixty suits, and had at that term the largest docket of any lawyer at the bar. His management of these causes brought new business, his success as a lawyer became fixed, and his practice has been constantly on the increase ever since. He at once began to enlarge his sphere of practice, by attending the Courts of all the counties in the Circuit, which he continued to do for many years.

It was then customary for lawyers in full practice to ride the Circuit with the Judge, passing from county to county until the Circuit was completed. Those were healthful and happy days. After the day's work was done, Judge and lawyers, generally, at the same country tavern, found much to enjoy in each others society, and the labors of the day were followed by the social intercourse of the evening.

In 1833 there occurred a vacancy in the Senate of Virginia for this District, and Colonel Smith was urged to run for the place by friends who desired his assistance in shaping the trans-Alleghany land laws, then a prominent subject of discussion and legislation. In this race Colonel Philip R. Thompson was his opponent, but Colonel Smith was elected.

During this term in the Senate, Colonel Smith gave such satisfaction that at the regular election which followed, he was re-elected to the Senate without opposition. He was urged to run for a third term, but, before his return from Richmond, he declined to become a candidate, and Colonel Robert A. Thompson was announced as an available man for the position. Upon his return home, Colonel Smith's friends insisted that he *should* make the race. Although there was yet little more than time to announce himself as a candidate in his own county, having only time to get to one county in the District, other than Kanawha—the county of Logan, which then included Boone—he was again elected. At the end of the first year of his third term, he resigned his office as Senator, believing that the Act of 1838 had settled, as far as practicable, the land laws of this section.

While a member of the Senate of Virginia, Colonel Smith received the honorary degree of Master of Arts from the Ohio University, which became his by right of graduation eighteen years before, but had not been given at the time, because of the fact that the University was not authorized by law to confer honorary degrees.

The study of the land laws of Virginia, while in the Senate, together with the former practice which he had experienced, placed him in the van of the profession so far as that subject was concerned. It is, I believe, conceded on all sides that he has, in this abstruse branch of jurisprudence, always maintained his position as the first lawyer of the State, when the Virginias were one. From 1831 to 1874 he was actively employed in every land case of importance in the Circuit Court, and in many out of it; most of them being of great complexity, and involving lands of great value. One of these cases occupied twenty-six days in the trial, and another thirty-one days. In all of the vast number of land cases in which the Colonel has been engaged as an attorney, about nine-tenths of them have been decided in favor of his clients. This, of itself, would establish his reputation as a land lawyer.

In 1849 he was appointed District Attorney of the United States, for the Western District of Virginia, by President Taylor, and remained in office during the term of Taylor and Fillmore. Having always been a

taunch Whig, upon the accession of President Pierce he was removed. He was, however, re-appointed to that important position by President Lincoln, in 1862, and continued in office for five years, when he resigned, and General Nathan Goff, the present incumbent was appointed to succeed him. He was regarded by the Attorney General in Mr. Lincoln's cabinet as one of the ablest of the one hundred or more District Attorneys then in the service of the United States.

In 1852 he was elected a member of the Constitutional Convention of Virginia, a body composed of the very best men of the State, and he took a prominent part in the debates of that body.

He was also a member of the Convention which formed the State of West Virginia, and strongly advocated the including all of the territory of Virginia west of the Blue Ridge, in the new State, and the location of the Capital at the White Sulphur Springs ; but was overruled by the majority of the Convention. Although this would have seemed chimerical in the then condition of affairs, and would have been bitterly opposed by a great part of those counties which would have been affected by this move, yet it is believed that a large portion, if not a majority, of the people of those counties, would now be well pleased if the measure advocated by Colonel Smith had prevailed.

He served one term in the House of Delegates of Virginia, and one in West Virginia. In the last he labored with great earnestness, successfully resisting an effort to repeal the bill locating the Capital at Charleston.

At the breaking out of the war, Colonel Smith was outspoken in defense of the Union. He did more, perhaps, than any other man in the Kanawha Valley, to prevent the State from seceding ; and all through the dark days of the rebellion he was a staunch friend of the Union.

At the close of the war he was among the first to favor the advocacy of lenient measures towards those persons who had been engaged in rebellion, and because of his valiant services in that behalf, he was nominated in 1866, as the Democratic candidate for Governor of West Virginia ; but was defeated by Hon. A. I. Boreman. In that canvass he made an able fight, speaking in every county in the State, and rallying to his sup-

port every adherent of the Democratic party who was then permitted to vote.

During his public life, and in private life for forty years, he has advocated with great earnestness the construction of the great central water line, known as the James River and Kanawha Canal ; and it is a strange fact that his advocacy of this enterprise has several times subjected him to reproach and opposition in this Valley.

Colonel Smith has never been a man of policy. What he has done, or gained, has been by hard work, hard study, and stubborn determination. When he had an opinion on any subject, his expression of it has never been of doubtful interpretation. No one could be misled as to which side of any question he was on ; his opinions once formed, were not variable. Opposition, reproach, or abuse never affected his nerves. What he thought he spoke, and what he spoke he practiced. His manliness of character unfitted him for the wily ways of politics. It is the writer's opinion that the commendable virtues of candor and free speech have, more than anything else, stood in the way of his political advancement. He is a man of singular good nature. It has always been impossible for him to bear malice. No matter how violent may have been the attacks upon him, and he has had many, when the least advance toward reconciliation were made by the offending party, he has always been found ready to forgive and forget the offense. It has, therefore, generally been understood that no one need fear his enmity, as it has always been so easy to secure his friendship. A successful man in public life must make no enemies, and must be able and prompt to make those who offend him feel the power of his opposition. In both these traits, Colonel Smith was wanting. He never failed to plainly speak whatever he thought he ought to say, without regard to consequences ; and he never declined any overture of friendship or peace.

His choice of occupation was his profession. He followed it because he loved the study and practice of the law. He has always been a hard student, preparing his cases, so far as argument and understanding their points were concerned, with great care. In later life, he seldom warmed up to his work until after the case had begun, when he worked at it night

and day until it was concluded, and during its progress mastered all of its points.

Even now, he never enters the court-house when a cause is being tried, without undertaking to ascertain its points, frequently manifesting as much interest as the counsel actually employed in the suit.

He practiced about thirty years before the Court of Appeals of Virginia and of West Virginia, with marked success. He has also argued a number of cases in the Supreme Court of the United States.

Colonel Smith affected none of the graces of oratory. His strength has been in his sound common sense and his intimate acquaintance with the law. His arguments were always strong, forcible, to the point, and commanded the close attention of juries and careful consideration of the Courts.

The Colonel is now seventy-nine years of age, is hale and hearty, and bids fair for many more years of usefulness. A few years since he transferred his law practice to his son, Isaac N. Smith, Esq., who seems to have inherited many of the natural gifts and energy of his father; and the Colonel devotes the greater portion of his time to his large farm, on the Kanawha river, seven miles below Charleston. He, however, assists in the trial of important cases, and displays almost as much vigor and endurance as characterized him in his younger years.

#### HON. GREENBURY SLACK.

Hon. Greenbury Slack was born in Kanawha county, Virginia, December 3, 1807. His father, John Slack, Esq., was one of the first settlers of Kanawha county; he was a man of great firmness of character, and consequently was a very influential citizen. He was a Justice of the Peace under the old Virginia law, for many, many years, and being a local preacher in the M. E. Church, his house was a noted preaching place in the early history of Methodism in the Kanawha. Greenbury, possessing powers of observation in an unusual degree, learned much of human nature at the "warrant trials," and at religious meetings which were so commonly held at his father's residence; and no doubt the impressions



which were, under those circumstances, made upon his mind, tended, in a very large degree, towards shaping his future life and conduct. It cannot be denied that he there received his first impulses to cultivate his mind, and, if possible, rank above the ordinary citizen in an intellectual point of view.

There was no public schools in those days, and being poor, he was unable to attend the private or select schools, which were taught only in the towns and villages. These barriers, however, did not keep him from carrying out the resolution which he had made in early life, that he would educate himself, if he had to do so at home, without an instructor. He, therefore, procured a stock of text-books, and started out in the pursuit of knowledge. In this way he spent all of his time, except when he was required to work upon the farm ; and his progress was astonishing, both to himself and his friends. He mastered the rudiments of the English language—in fact, in a few years became a good grammarian ; and from the first he displayed unusual talents as a mathematician. In my twenty years of intimate acquaintance with him, I never saw him puzzled upon any proposition in mathematics. Figures were perfectly natural to him, and he spent much of his time in studying out rules of his own, by which he solved his problems. He had a rule of his own for every department of mathematics, and they were useful to him, because they avoided circumlocution and tautology. His aim in everything was brevity, clearness, force.

In his early training he did not neglect history. He was almost a constant reader of standard historical works ; and the result was, he possessed a large fund of general and useful knowledge. After he grew up to manhood, and especially in later life, but few in the county, and, I might say, in the State, were as well read in general literature as was Greenbury Slack. He could converse intelligently upon any general topic of history, either ancient or modern ; and he was especially a great admirer of the English poets. To look at him, one would readily suppose that he had no poetry in his soul. But the reverse was true. He spent a large portion of his time in reading standard poetical works, and could quote whole pages of Young, Shakespeare, Pollock, Milton, and others.

By dint of perseverance, in the manner I have stated, he procured an education, which was more thorough than that received by a large number of young men who pass regularly through our best colleges. Being an unpretentious man, however, he never took that rank as a leader in society, for which his abilities and education specially fitted him. Until after the war broke out, he did not loom up as a man of prominence in the county of his birth. It took more than ordinary measures to cause him to assume the position of a leader among men; but when he became once adjusted in the harness of public life, he saw what "might have been," in earlier years, had he not allowed his modesty and diffidence to keep him in retirement, and comparative obscurity.

In 1861, when the dark storm-cloud of war hung low in our political horizon, and when the life of the Nation was threatened by an internal foe, his patriotism, and love for the Union of his fathers, brought him to the front and caused him to yield his personal desires to the demands of his fellow-citizens. He, therefore, accepted the position of a Delegate from Kanawha county to the Convention which met in Wheeling, in 1861, and organized what was generally known as the "Restored Government of Virginia." In that memorable Convention Mr. Slack acted an important and conspicuous part. He was also a member of the Convention in 1863, which framed the Constitution of West Virginia—a Constitution which has been pronounced by many great statesmen as among the clearest and best ever adopted by any of the States. He was six years in the State Senate of West Virginia, of which body he was an honored and conspicuous member. In all of his public relations he acted wisely and prudently, and had the hearty endorsement of his constituents.

Prior to the war Mr. Slack was a Whig, but at the beginning of hostilities he united with the National Republican party, and remained a prominent and useful member of this organization, without wavering or faltering, up to the time of his death. He had but little confidence in men who changed their politics for personal aggrandizement. He was a party man, and yet was governed by reason and right. He was unfaltering and unchanging, yet tried at all times to do right, and act fairly with his fel-

low-men in regard to all political questions. He did his own thinking, and while in health he was a giant, hard to overcome, when he took a stand upon any public question. He was not a public speaker, but he was recognized for years as being among the ablest and most perspicuous writers in West Virginia. His language was pure; his sentences clear and piercing, and his diction beautiful.

He was a Christian; was a devoted and honored member of the Methodist Episcopal Church for over forty years. According to his means, Greenbury Slack did as much to forward the cause of Christ as any man in the county. He was a man of deep and positive convictions of duty, and did his work with a will. He could always be relied upon. He hardly ever changed his opinions; consequently one always knew where to find him. He was true to Christ, to his Church, his country, and his friends.

He was a useful man. As a rule, men are not properly credited for their deeds of usefulness. From an intimate personal acquaintance with Senator Slack for twenty years, I know that his deeds of charity and philanthropy have not been properly estimated. He was a true friend of the poor. Whole families, for years, drew their support from and through him, for which he never received, nor did he ever expect to receive, a single dollar. But few men in the Kanawha Valley have a record equal to his in this particular. I believe in philanthropy. I believe men, when able, should divide their property with the poor. I believe that God smiles upon a cheerful giver. Greenbury Slack gave of his substance cheerfully and freely; for which he has a glorious record in Heaven.

Mr. Slack died of paralysis at his residence in Charleston, July 1, 1873, in the sixty-sixth year of his age. His remains were taken to the family burying ground, seven miles up Elk river, where they were deposited in the cold and silent grave by the side of his two sons, long since deceased, where they will await the summons of the Master, calling them to another and a better world.

THOMPSON CAMPBELL WATKINS, M. D.

I presume that nearly every man, woman, and child in the county is acquainted with, or has heard of Dr. Watkins. He has been a promi-

ment and active physician in Charleston and Kanawha county for nearly half a century, during which time he has attended thousands of patients, and demonstrated great knowledge and skill in his profession.

He was born in Cumberland county, Virginia, May 29, 1802, and is, therefore, now in his seventy-fifth year. He received a good academic education in his native county, and attended the Pennsylvania University, at Philadelphia, and the Transylvania University, at Lexington, Kentucky, from both of which institutions he graduated, receiving the degree of M. D. His medical education, so far as college training is concerned, was, therefore, better than that received by most practitioners; and to this may be attributed, no doubt, to a considerable extent, the success which has attended him in his practice. Of course, it is not claimed that a collegiate education is all-in-all, nor that it can be made to answer the demands of a business or professional life. By no means. It, however, places one in a position to enable him to build up a large fund of general and useful knowledge, obtained by reading, conversation, and thought, which is very difficult to do, and in fact is rarely accomplished by any one who has not had the advantages of college training, or in other words, has not prepared a proper foundation upon which to build. The necessity of a collegiate education cannot well be overestimated as a desideratum in a professional life.

Dr. Watkins has always been a close student, applying himself almost constantly to his books, when not otherwise professionally engaged. This, coupled with his college training, accounts for his success as a practitioner of the healing art. No man need ever expect to rise above mediocrity except by constant application to his profession. This Dr. Watkins seemed fully to understand, and therefore employed all of his leisure in reading and study.

Dr. Watkins was principally brought up in Charlotte county, Virginia, and practiced medicine in that county about seven years. He came to Kanawha in 1836, opened an office, and has remained here ever since. His reading and practice embraced all of the different branches of the profession; still, however, he made botany a specialty. He not only knew all of the names of the different medicinal plants, but could distin-

guish the plants themselves. This Valley produces a great variety of the different plants used in the practice of medicine, and Dr. Watkins, in his younger years, spent much time on the hillsides, engaged in the study of botany.

A remarkable fact in the long and useful life of Dr. Watkins is this: although often solicited by friends, he never ran for an office. He preferred his profession to political preferment, giving his full time and energy to the former, and, therefore, avoided the wily ways, disappointments, and follies of the latter. This cannot be said of many leading men in the profession of medicine, who have lived to the ripe old age of over "three score years and ten."

In 1840 Dr. Watkins was made a widower by the death of his estimable wife, leaving him alone in the world with one son, Dr. Joseph F. Watkins, a young man of fine intellect and well posted in the profession. The Doctor never re-married.

He has been remarkably healthy during nearly all of his life. With the exceptions of a severe attack of cholera in 1849, and a recent illness, he has had good health, scarcely ever losing a day from the practice of his profession for upwards of fifty years. Although now able to walk around, still he is feeble, and gives but little attention to his profession, except to those who visit his office for relief. His friends trust that he will rally out of his present feeble condition, and be restored to his former health and usefulness.

#### AARON WHITTEKER.

One of the oldest men of this county is Mr. Aaron Whitteker, of Charleston. He was born in Worcester county, Massachusetts, February 28, 1790. He received an ordinary education in the common schools of Worcester county, attending school during the winter months, and working on his father's farm the remaining portion of the year. In the spring of 1810 Mr. Whitteker left his Massachusetts home and came to Hudson, on the North river, in New York, where he remained but a short time. While at Hudson he met Mr. Bradford Noyes, of Kanawha, Virginia, who was in the East, disposing of furs. Mr. Noyes gave a flattering account

of the richness and pleasantness of the Great Kanawha Valley, and Mr. Whitteker was so captivated by the description that he decided to accompany Mr. Noyes to Virginia. They started thither on a small sloop, stopping a short time at New York, and ending their journey on the sloop at Baltimore, Maryland, which was then a small but prosperous town of a few thousand inhabitants. From Baltimore to Kanawha, a distance of about 400 miles, they traveled on foot, making the trip in twelve days, thus averaging  $33\frac{1}{2}$  miles per day. They were both young and active, and accustomed to hardships of this character, so their *little* journey of 400 miles, on foot, was made without any special effort or exhaustion.

They arrived in Charleston about the middle of June, 1810, and as Mr. Whitteker's eldest brother—William Whitteker—had come to Kanawha with Isaac Noyes in 1804, and was engaged in business, Mr. Whitteker had no difficulty in finding something to do. Levi Whitteker, a younger brother of Aaron and William, also came to Kanawha, and the three brothers agreed to engage in the manufacture of salt. They, accordingly, bored a well opposite Tinkersville, which was the first well sunk on the south side of the Kanawha. They struck a good vein of salt water at the depth of seventy-five feet, constructed the furnace, and commenced making salt in the spring of the next year—1807. They continued this business for six years, which proved quite remunerative. During the war of 1812 they sold all the salt they could produce at one dollar per bushel. The supply of water running short at their furnace, they bored another well on Isaac Noyes' farm, a short distance below, sinking it to the depth of 700 feet, and failing to find salt water abandoned it. A few years afterwards, Mr. Noyes sank this well fifteen feet deeper, and struck a strong vein of excellent brine.

Bradford Noyes was engaged in the manufacture of salt, and in 1816 Mr. Whitteker made a contract with him, agreeing to furnish wood for the furnace, while Mr. Noyes was to give him half the salt produced. He accordingly employed a number of wood-choppers, placing Mr. William Wood over them as manager, while he and his brother Thomas, who had come South a few years before, conveyed the wood on boats to the furnace. They used two large keel boats, one of which was being load-

ed while the other was going to and from the furnace. In this way they boated wood to the furnace, making one trip a day, for the period of three years, "rain or shine," as Mr. Whitteker expressed it.

In 1819 Mr. Whitteker engaged in the mercantile business in Charleston, and built a brick store-room thirty-two feet front by twenty feet in depth, on that portion of Front street which is now used as a levee. He continued in this business for a period of forty-five years in the same building, which he enlarged as the business justified, until, when it was destroyed by fire, in 1870, it had been deepened out to sixty feet, two stories high. In this establishment Mr. Whitteker sold dry-goods, groceries, boots, shoes, hardware, and almost everything in the mercantile line of business. He was the only merchant in Charleston in 1819, except James C. McFarland, who kept a store on the corner where George Bender is now merchandising, immediately below the court-house. Mr. Whitteker was known for many miles in every direction from Charleston, as a leading produce merchant, who paid good prices for everything raised in the Valley; and he informed me that for a number of years he was personally acquainted with every citizen of Kanawha county, from his many dealings with the people.

The same year that he began merchandising in Charleston, he built the two-story brick building now used by A. Q. Miller & Co. as a drug store, and Arnold & Abney as a dry-goods store. During his business career in Charleston, Mr. Whitteker built fully twenty dwelling-houses, which he sold to persons locating in the town. A number of these houses are still standing.

During the time that he was engaged in furnishing wood for Mr. Noyes' furnace, he cleared all of the land from the Magazine branch, on Elk river, to Wilson's hollow, on the Kanawha, a distance of four miles; and in addition to this, he removed the timber from the old Charles Brown farm of several hundred acres, on the south side of the Kanawha, a mile or more above Charleston. He paid fifty cents a cord to laborers for chopping the wood, and gave employment to a large number of men. At that time coal had not been discovered, or at least had not been utilized as a fuel, and all of the salt furnaces were run with wood for heating purposes.

Mr. Whitteker has been a hard worker all of his life. He is now in his eighty-seventh year, is as straight as an Indian, and is almost as active as when in the prime of life. His health is good, and in all probability he will be here many years yet. He is six feet tall, and his average weight for the last thirty years has been 150 pounds. In earlier life he weighed considerably more. He is one of the most agile men of his age that can be found anywhere.

JAMES C. MCFARLAND.

I have been furnished with a copy from the family record of this old citizen, written by himself, in the following language :

"James C. McFarland, son of James Clark McFarland and Abigail Kimball, was born at Haverhill, Massachusetts, October 1, 1792, and removed to Marietta, Ohio, in June, 1803, where his father then resided. His first wife was Lethe, daughter of Major John Reynolds, whom he married May 20, 1819. His second wife was Dulce, daughter of Rev. Calvin Chaddock, married January 4, 1824. Third wife, Lucy W. Greenhow, married in Richmond, Virginia, March 8, 1828. Fourth wife, Mrs. Maria Broome, married April 3, 1847."

By his first marriage he had one daughter, who married Dr. James Orville Grant, both of whom are dead. By his second wife he had one daughter, the wife of Major A. T. Laidley, of this city. He had four children by his third marriage, two of whom survived him—Mrs. N. K. Cecil, of Wheeling, and Mrs. Dr. Houser, of this place ; the fourth child died in infancy. He had no children by his fourth marriage. His son, by his third wife, was the late Rev. James Robert McFarland, a graduate of Brown University, Rhode Island ; Princeton College, New Jersey, and Harvard University, Cambridge, Massachusetts, who studied for the ministry, and at the time of his death, April 4, 1859, was pastor of a Unitarian Church in Charleston, South Carolina. His fourth wife survived him, and died in this city July 25, 1874. Mr. McFarland died here November 9, 1864, in the seventy-third year of his age.

Few men of our time bore a more excellent character than the subject of this sketch. He came to Kanawha in the year 1813, and at a period



when this county may be said to have been in flush times, for it was in those years that salt was money, generally commanding one dollar per bushel. This youthful adventurer, to the then Eldorado of the West, left his home in Marietta to seek his fortune. It is related of him that he commenced life by hard labor, and engaged in the manufacture of nails by hand. In this and other employments he acquired a small means which he invested in merchandise, and was the first of such merchants in Charleston. His father dying a few years afterwards, in moderate circumstances, the care and charge of the younger children, by a second marriage, devolved upon him; how well he discharged his trust, those of these children who survive can say. By energy and industry he soon became the leading merchant in Kanawha.

I cannot better give a further history of this worthy citizen of our county, than to insert here an obituary from the *Kanawha Republican*, written by the late Judge Summers, upon his death, in the year 1864:

"At the epoch of Burr's Conspiracy, although too young to form a part of the military force detailed to watch the movements on Blennerhassett's Island, and to capture the vessels collected in that vicinity for the descent upon New Orleans, he was a close observer of passing events, and remembered with great distinctness the occurrences of that exciting period.

"In 1813, Mr. McFarland, attracted by the growing prospects of the salt business on the Kanawha river, the fertility of our Valley, then proverbial, and its probable future, removed from Marietta to Charleston, and established himself as a merchant. He has continued to reside in this place from that time until his death, a period of more than half a century.

"By his uniform course of probity and fair dealing; Mr. McFarland early acquired the entire confidence of the community of which he had become a member, as an honest man, and an upright, intelligent merchant. This sentiment was abiding and universal. His word as to cost, quality, and value, was law with his customers. We had no bank in those days, and he was often the depository of those who, having surplus money, thought it safer in his hands than in their own. When the finances

had become greatly deranged, subsequent to the war of 1812, and un-chartered banks, as well as irresponsible individuals, were flooding the country with their paper promises, Mr. McFarland, for the purpose of local protection, and to exclude a worthless currency, was induced, for a time, to issue his own notes, which, while continued, were as acceptable to the community, and as much relied on, as the notes of the bank of the United States afterwards were.

“ His business continued to be prosperous, and was followed by the rewards of honest diligence and financial skill. He was thoroughly identified with the community in which he lived. He did more, perhaps, than any other citizen to build up and enlarge the town of Charleston. He took the liveliest and most efficient interest in everything looking to the prosperity of the Kanawha Valley, and of the State at large.

“ His fellow-citizens early recognized in him many of the useful qualities of a public agent, and often solicited him to become their representative in the Legislature. His domestic habits and characteristic modesty rendered him averse to the strifes of political life. He, however, finally yielded to the wishes of his friends, and occasionally served as a member of the House of Delegates. In this position, he mainly devoted himself to the internal improvement of the State by railroads and canals. He was the special friend of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, in its inception, under its first President, Philip Thomas, and took the most active interest in the effort then made to procure the passage of that great work, on a line from Harper's Ferry, up the Valley of Virginia, and to terminate on the Ohio river, through the Valley of the Great Kanawha.

“ When, in 1832, the Bank of Virginia decided to locate a Branch Bank at Charleston, as if by common consent, Mr. McFarland was selected as the man, of all others amongst us, best suited to become its President. That office he continued to hold by annual re-election, and without opposition, down to the time of his death, nearly one-third of a century. How well he has managed the institution committed to his care, is attested, not only by his long continuance in office, by the voluntary action of the stockholders and directors, but also by the public fact, that during the period of his Presidency, down to the breaking out

of the late war, this Branch had declared an average dividend of *fourteen per cent. per annum* on the capital assigned to it. Good judgment and financial skill, coupled with scrupulous accuracy and fidelity, characterized his whole administration of the Bank.

"The subject of this sketch was not a learned man, in the scholastic sense of that term. He had not a University education. But he possessed a vigorous intellect, which had been cultivated and enlarged by extensive reading, by close observation, and long experience. He owned a well-selected library, and in the relaxations of business, delighted to commune with the great thinkers of the world. He wrote with ease and perspicuity. Blessed with an unusually retentive memory, he was the chronicle of the events of his day, public and private, and was often resorted to for the solution of questions obscured by the mists of time. In addition to a memory so tenacious, he kept a regular diary, running through nearly fifty years of his life, which unfortunately was consumed, with many of his valuable books and papers, in the burning of the Bank House, in September, 1862. Now that he is gone, this diary, the work of his own hands, containing the record of events as they transpired, and of his daily thoughts, would be an invaluable treasure to his family and friends.

"Mr. McFarland had his peculiarities, but they were his own, and sat well upon him. Those who knew him well would not have desired that he should be without them. Under an exterior, sometimes of apparent coldness, he carried a warm and generous heart. This apparent coldness was of doubt and inquiry, not repulsion. Real merit never appealed to him in vain for succor and relief. Nor did he wait for the appeal. The poor and destitute have often been administered to by this good man, without knowing from whose hands the bounty came. He delighted to give his alms in secret, and we have the promise, that 'He who seeth in secret shall reward him openly,' when it shall be announced in the great day of reckoning that 'inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.'

"As a husband, father, and brother, he was a model of excellence. It was delightful to see him at his own fireside, surrounded by those he

loved, and who idolized him. It was here that the inner man was laid open to view. The business of the counting-house, the cares and anxieties of the Bank, the vexations of politics, were all thrown off, and whether in middle life or in old age, he was ready to give himself to the household, and make one of them in grief or in joy; to weep with those who wept, and to rejoice with those who rejoiced. I have seen him in periods of family affliction, when bowed down with his own sorrow, presenting an example of manly and patient endurance, and binding up the broken hearts of others stricken by the same blow. I have seen him, too, when all was gayety and mirth, and he the center of enjoyment, living over again, with wife, children, and friends, the scenes of his youth, and with mimic pleasantry, or his own inimitable humor, filling the house with innocent revelry.

"Mr. McFarland was not a member of any Church. He was, however, a regular attendant on Divine worship, where his attentive face and venerable form will be sadly missed. He was a liberal supporter of a preached Gospel, both at home and abroad. In his own household he was a teacher of righteousness, and daily offered up thanksgiving for the goodness of God. He lived the life of a believer, and his *acts* were a good profession of his trust in the promises of the Gospel, and the saving power of its Divine author.

"His funeral drew together a large concourse of surviving friends and neighbors, to testify their respect for his memory, and their *sense* of the loss, public and private, occasioned by his death."

WILLIAM WHITTEKER.

William Whitteker, father of Norris S. Whitteker, was among the first settlers of Charleston. He came here soon after the beginning of the present century, and engaged in the fur trade. For a number of years he was a salt manufacturer, and a merchant. In the fall of 1852 he visited his daughter at Burlington, Iowa, where he died March 12, 1853, as will be seen by the following obituary notice, taken from a Wheeling paper of that year:

"Died, in Burlington, Iowa, March 12, 1853, at the residence of his son-

in-law, Mr. Anderson, William Whitteker, a native of Princeton, Worcester county, Massachusetts, for forty years a resident of Charleston, Kanawha county, Virginia.

"This venerable man was born January 14, 1775. In early life he followed the sea, his wanderings and ramblings, according to his own estimate, extending to one hundred and sixteen thousand miles. In 1802-3-4 he made several trading excursions to Canada, and to Detroit and Chillicothe, and engaged in the fur-trade in Kentucky. He was married to Mrs. Philena Cobb, of Boston, September 6, 1806, and on the 28th of the following December, took up his residence in Charleston, Virginia. He was distinguished for industrious habits, for enterprise, and for integrity of character. In all the relations of life he won the esteem and confidence of his fellow-men. When a young man, Paine's Age of Reason, then just published, fell into his hands, and led him to embrace infidel sentiments, which he cherished for twenty years. In 1816, to use his own language, he 'was delivered from the hands of the powers of darkness,' and in the following year professed the Christian religion, and joined the Presbyterian Church in Charleston, under the ministry of Henry Ruffner. He was a dilligent student of the Bible, and devotedly attached to Christian institutions. Having served God and his generation, he felt in his last sickness, that he had nothing to do, but to die and go home. May a double portion of his spirit rest upon his descendants."

NORRIS STANLEY WHITTEKER.

The subject of this sketch was born in Charleston, Kanawha county, Virginia, February 3, 1807, where he has ever since resided. Mr. Whitteker has always claimed the honor of being the first white child born in Charleston, and in this, no doubt, he is correct. His younger years were spent in hunting and fishing, in both of which occupations he established his reputation as an expert. He attended school for a number of years in the Mercer Academy, under the instruction of Dr. Henry Ruffner, Jacob Rand, and Parson Chaddock, and obtained a fair English education.

After he grew to manhood, Mr. Whitteker first entered business as a flat-boatman, in the trade between Charleston and Cincinnati, requiring about one month to accomplish the round trip. On the down trip his boat was loaded with furs, produce, etc., and coming back he brought sugar, coffee, clothing, and the like. These boats were the only means of transportation, in those days, between the Kanawha river and the western cities, and were, therefore, always occupied, and afforded a paying business.

Mr. Whitteker's next occupation was that of a flat-boatman, in the conveyance of salt to the towns and cities on the lower Ohio. He followed this business for a number of years, often running salt-boats down the Mississippi river as far as Mills' Point. He next learned the carpenter's trade, and has worked more or less in that branch of business ever since he attained manhood. There are a number of houses now standing in Charleston which were constructed by him, both as architect and builder. Mr. Whitteker could never remain in idleness, and when he failed to find employment in one line of business he took up another, so in early life he learned the painter's trade, and for more than fifty years he has been engaged in that business. He has painted more houses, perhaps, than any man now living in the Kanawha Valley.

His uncle, Thomas Whitteker, was the proprietor of a large saw-mill at the mouth of Elk, and for eleven years Norris was head sawyer on the mill, and superintendent of the building of boats, which was carried on as part of the legitimate business of all saw-mills in early times on the Kanawha.

He was engaged, in early life, in steamboating, in the employ of Armstrong, Grant & Co., as Mate on the steamer Emigrant, and continued that business from 1828 till 1830. In 1831 he built the three large brick houses on Kanawha street, now owned by W. T. Thayer, Mrs. W. Rand, and John C. Ruby; and in 1832, he built the residence, on the same street, now owned and occupied by Mrs. James H. Fry. All these buildings are constructed of brick which were made by Mr. Whitteker's own hands.

On January 19, 1832, he was united in marriage with Miss Luticia

Morris, daughter of Carroll Morris ; and they lived together as husband and wife, for forty-four years and four months, she having departed this life April 17, 1876.

Mr. Whitteker was an ardent supporter of the Union, and, as a token of respect and confidence, he was appointed Postmaster of Charleston, in the Spring of 1861, by President Lincoln, which office he held until the Fall of 1866, when he was removed by President Johnson, because he refused to pay allegiance to that gentleman, when he went over to the Democratic party, after the assassination of President Lincoln. During the war Charleston was an important military post, which created an immense business for the Postmaster. On one memorable day his registry book showed that 40,000 letters passed through his office. For three or four years the average number of letters which passed through the office was 12,000. That is more than treble the number of letters now handled in the same office, although the town has more than trebled its population.

Mr. Whitteker has been a noted temperance worker in Charleston and surrounding country, for more than forty years. During that time he has delivered nearly one thousand temperance addresses. In 1830, he joined the Washingtonian Temperance Society, and has belonged to some active, living society of temperance workers ever since ; and during the forty-six years that have intervened, he has never even tasted anything intoxicating. Ever since the writer can remember, "Uncle Norris Whitteker" has been styled the wheel-horse of the temperance cause in Kanawha county.

He joined the Presbyterian Church in 1831, and has lived a consistent Christian from that time to the present. His first vote was cast for John Q. Adams, for the Presidency, and in all the time that he has been exercising the right of suffrage, he cast but one Democratic vote, and that was for Hon. John J. Jacob, who ran as an Independent Democratic candidate for Governor, in 1872, against the regular party nominee.

Mr. Whitteker is a man of great physical power and endurance. He has had good health all of his life, and is now able to do as much hard work as any one among nine-tenths of the young men of the county.

He is five feet eight inches tall, and his average weight for fifty years has been 180 pounds.

COLONEL LEVI JAMES WOODYARD.

Colonel L. J. Woodyard, so well known in Charleston and the Kanawha Valley, was born in Fairfax county, Virginia, February 14, 1800. His father removed from there to Prebble's Riffle, on the Little Kanawha river, in Wood county, when Levi was but six years of age. Mr. Woodyard was a farmer, and raised his son to manual labor. While not engaged at farm work, Levi attended school in Wood county, and thus secured an ordinary English education. He remained in Wood county for twelve years. From there his father removed still farther west, locating in Athens county, Ohio. Levi remained with his father, laboring upon a farm, until March 3, 1825, when he came to Kanawha county, and became a permanent resident of the Old Dominion.

Being an able-bodied young man, and raised to hard labor, he did not hesitate to take hold of any kind of business that offered itself. While seeking employment he was offered a situation as sweepsman on a flat-boat, loaded with salt for the lower Ohio river. He accepted the position, and was so well pleased with the business that he followed boating for a number of years, frequently running down the Ohio river to Cairo, Illinois.

Dickinson & Shrewsbury, who were the leading salt manufacturers of the Kanawha Valley for over a quarter of a century, observing the earnestness, industry, and sobriety of young Woodyard, gave him the position of manager of their furnace. The Colonel very soon convinced them of his eminent fitness for the position, and they retained him in that capacity for twenty-three years, or until they discontinued their business as salt-makers. This, alone, is proof of his honesty and business qualities, for no man could have remained for so many years in so responsible a position if he were not honorable and qualified.

After concluding his engagement with Dickinson & Shrewsbury, he was appointed, in 1862, as salt agent, to sell Kanawha salt in the West. This position he held until the beginning of the war, when the salt bu-



siness in this Valley was necessarily suspended. The Colonel returned to Kanawha, and made his home in Charleston, where he has resided ever since.

By industry and economy Colonel Woodyard amassed a handsome fortune, which he holds in his own right, a considerable portion of which he invested in stock in the Kanawha Valley Bank at the close of the war. He was chosen President of that Bank at its organization, and retained the position until a few years ago, when he resigned to give place to Mr. Charles C. Lewis, a younger and more vigorous man. The Colonel, however, still holds the position of a Director in the institution, and devotes a large portion of his time to the business of the Bank.

Colonel Woodyard is six feet and one inch tall, and weighs over two hundred pounds. His health has been good all his life, and although considerably past three score years and ten, his personal appearance indicates his ability to endure many more years of vigorous labor and usefulness.

JAMES MADISON LAIDLEY, ESQ.

Though not ranking in age with others whom I have sketched in my memorial history of the county, Mr. Laidley was so active and prominent in his earlier life, in the political strifes of the county, that he merits notice at the hands of the writer. He was born in Parkersburg, Virginia, January 9, 1809. His father, James G. Laidley, who died at that place in 1822, was a lawyer; the friend and associate of the late Philip Doddridge, of Brooke county, and General Lewis Cass, who then resided at Marietta, Ohio. He was also a Major in the war of 1812 with Great Britain, and served several years in the Virginia Assembly. His grandfather, Thomas Laidley, was a soldier in the revolutionary war, a native of Scotland, and one of the earliest settlers of Monongalia county; he died in 1838, at the residence of his son, the late John Laidley, of Cabell county, who was one of the most prominent men of that county in his day.

The mother of James M. Laidley was the daughter of Colonel Alexander Quarrier, also a native of Scotland, who settled in this county in 1811, and died in 1827. Many of the older citizens of this coun-

ty cherish vivid recollections of the urbane gentleman and stately soldier, as he presided over public meetings at that early day.

Among the most distinguished sons of Colonel Quarrier were Alexander W. Quarrier and Captain Monroe Quarrier. The former was the widely-known Clerk of the Circuit and County Courts of this county for thirty years, and was reputed the best in the State. He was the most popular man of his day in the county, and was distinguished for his courtly modesty and genial manners. His brother, Captain Monroe Quarrier, was distinguished for no less noble traits of character. He was Captain of several of the finest steamers that navigated the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, between Louisville and New Orleans, and also of steamers running into Mobile, Alabama. It was while he was commander of a fine steamer in the latter trade, in 1848, that the City Council of Mobile voted him a splendid silver tea-set, as a testimonial of appreciation for his noble daring in leaving the wharf at Mobile, with his steamer laden to the water's edge with cotton, to rescue those in peril on a burning ship, seen by him at a distance of nine miles from the city, on which occasion he was instrumental in rescuing more than a hundred lives from a frightful death. Among the distinguished tokens presented to him, of high appreciation, for his noble deeds, was a gold-headed cane, inscribed with the words which he uttered as he gave orders for his steamer to hasten to the burning vessel, "I will give all I possess to save one human life"—a sentiment worthy to hand his name, with honor to those who bear it, down to the latest posterity. He died, without heirs, in 1836. His remains, together with those of his father, Colonel Quarrier, and A. W. Quarrier, are interred in Spring Hill Cemetery. Only one son of Colonel Quarrier is now living—A. A. Quarrier, of Louisville, Kentucky; and the wife of Mr. Aaron Whitteker, heretofore noticed, is a daughter of Colonel Quarrier. Mr. Laidley's mother died in this city in the year 1875.

He has one brother, Major Alexander T. Laidley, who has been referred to in this history. Mr. James M. Laidley was a member of the Virginia Legislature in 1848-49. He was the Whig nominee for Congress from this District in 1858, when it extended to within six miles of Kentucky, thirty miles from Pennsylvania, and a like distance from the

Maryland line. His Democratic competitor, the late General Albert G. Jenkins, in a Democratic District of six thousand majority, was elected by the reduced majority of sixteen hundred.

In 1829 he edited and published the *Western Register* for one year in the town of Charleston; it was a sprightly, interesting newspaper. In 1831-2 he formed one of the late Judge Baldwin's class of law students at Staunton, Virginia, and has continued in the practice of the legal profession, with slight intervals, up to the present time.

Mr. Laidley is one of the most energetic men that we have ever known. He is, in fact, a man of untiring energy and enterprise. He has been a hard worker all his life, and although now past sixty-seven years of age, he is as vigorous and industrious as he was years ago. He has acquired a considerable estate by his industry, and I trust he may live many years to enjoy it.

He has given many years of his life to the study of finance; and although classed with the "soft money" men in the present Presidential contest, yet his articles are not only readable, but are marked both with ability and a thorough knowledge of the subject. Mr. Laidley was one of the Electors for West Virginia on the Cooper and Cary ticket, and was suggested by those of his fellow-citizens who believe in the "greenback" doctrine, as an available man for Governor of the State.

#### ALEXANDER WASHINGTON QUARRIER.

Among the notable men who have lived and died in Kanawha county, none were better known, or more highly esteemed, than the late Alexander W. Quarrier. He was born in the city of Richmond, Virginia, on the 16th day of November, 1795, and died in Charleston, Kanawha county, July 26, 1863. He was the eldest son of Colonel Alexander Quarrier, who was born in Fifeshire, Scotland, who emigrated to America in 1774, and resided some years in Philadelphia, where he married, in 1783; removed to Richmond in 1786, and lived there until 1811, in which year he came to Charleston, Kanawha county, and there died in 1827. For a number of years previous to his coming, he was Captain of the

Public Guard at Richmond, and was highly regarded by Mr. Jefferson, Chancellor Wythe, and others of like distinguished character.

His son, Alexander W., the subject of this sketch, was appointed Clerk of the County Court of Kanawha county in 1822, and on the organization of the Circuit Superior Courts of Law and Chancery in 1830, in Virginia, he was made Clerk also of that Court for the same county. Both these offices he held continuously until 1861, when, refusing to take the oath required by an ordinance of the Wheeling Convention, they were declared vacant, and Mr. Quarrier was deprived of both offices.

Few men have lived who were more beloved, more entirely trusted, or more deeply regretted at death, than Mr. Quarrier. The eldest son of a large family of brothers and sisters, he was always regarded by them and their numerous descendants as their head and pride. He was always noted for his buoyant and cheerful spirits, his benevolent heart, useful and active life, cultivated mind, and refined tastes, which not only made him, in some sense, the idol of his family, but the most popular and esteemed man in his county. There was no stint to his open-handed charity; of what he had, he gave freely; when he had not, he cheered the needy with a true sympathy and an elevated hope.

In the discharge of his public duties he was honest, faithful, untiring, capable, exact, and accommodating. To the humble and uninformed he was always the trusted friend and adviser. To all he was kind and prodigal of trouble and labor in answering their requests, and supplying their wants from his office. His ready and accurate knowledge of all his official duties, astonishing memory of records and papers; his methodical and systematic business habits; his generous spirit of accommodation, and hearty, cheerful manner, rendered all business with him a pleasure; while his rich fund of anecdote and humor, and happy reminiscences of men, manners, and things of by-gone days, endeared him to all as a beloved companion and most agreeable public officer. Long will the memory of his hearty laugh, good-humored and benevolent face, live among those who knew him.

There is nothing eventful, in the sense of biographical literature, in Mr. Quarrier's life, to record. The only offices ever asked for, or held by

him, were those before mentioned. While he was always decided and ardent in his political opinions, he never sought political honors. His career in life, although marked by no distinguished event, nor remembered by any particular incident of public importance, was that of the quiet gentleman; fulfilling all his duties, giving and bestowing pleasure to all about him whether in the little gatherings on the streets, in the parlor, or at the hearth-stone in his office, among the rich and poor, the humble, the cultivated and refined alike. In fine, he was of those whose memory is always recalled with pleasant feelings by those who knew him, and lives in tradition among those who follow after.

The traditions of the counties have preserved the recollections of a class in Virginia whose virtues will not soon be forgotten,—the “Old County Clerks,” a race of true gentlemen, whose refinement and intelligence, high and generous social qualities, cultivated by their constant association with the most intellectual and distinguished men of the day, constituted them a most interesting and influential class in Virginia. Of such, Mr. Quarrier was a striking example; they are fast passing away, or entirely gone.

Mr. Quarrier, in early life, married Caroline W., daughter of the late Joel Shrewsbury, Sr., of Kanawha county. Her charities and many virtues endeared her to all the people of Charleston, and made her the beloved wife of so excellent a husband, whom she still survives, and still mourns. Mr. Quarrier's children who survived him are two sons, William A., a prominent lawyer of the Charleston bar, and Joel S., the efficient and accommodating Clerk of the County Court, and three daughters, all of whom are residents of Charleston, and are respected by all who know them.

LEVI WELCH,

This worthy citizen of Kanawha, at the time of his death, more than a quarter of a century ago, was among the oldest inhabitants. He was born in Washington county, Pennsylvania, near the border of the borough of Washington, and with his father's family came to Charleston at an early age.

Levi Welch was not only the oldest in years and residence, but the most prominent merchant and man of business in Charleston. In the language of an obituary notice of Mr. Welch, he possessed a mind of extraordinary strength, quickness and vigor; he could seize and comprehend at a glance what in most men would require much mental skill and labor. No man enjoyed in a greater degree the respect and confidence of his fellow-citizens, nor was their confidence misplaced. In all his various mercantile and financial transactions, his accuracy was proverbial, while his integrity, promptitude and fidelity were alike conspicuous and honorable.

Mr. Welch was a resident of Charleston for many years, but later in life lived in the Salines, where he was either employed in merchandising, manufacturing salt, or as chief manager of the business of some of the companies engaged in the purchase, shipment and sale of salt. At that day the monopolies in the salt business were large concerns, and required the very best accountants and clerks. In the capacity of book-keeper, cashier and accountant, Mr. Welch excelled; indeed, his place could not be supplied, and his management was essential to the success of his employers. The loss of such a man was deeply felt. During the prevalence of the cholera in this county, he took the disease, and died on the 23rd of August, 1849, in the 65th year of his age, leaving a large family, many of his descendants still residing in Kanawha. He married, about the year 1821, a daughter of the late Goodrich Slaughter, one of the earlier settlers of this county, who was connected with the more prominent families of the Valley. His widow still survives, in apparent vigorous health, and is likely to outlive many of her children.

#### JOHN WELCH.

Like his brother Levi, John Welch was not a professional, but a self-made man, and, until married, followed the occupation of a clerk, book-keeper and accountant. The two brothers excelled in these acquirements. John acted in the capacity of deputy sheriff of the county for several years. Later in life he carried on merchandising. Exceedingly retiring and domestic in his habits, modest and unassuming in his manner

and deportment, conscientious and upright as a merchant, strict in his integrity, and devoted to his domestic duties, he enjoyed the universal respect and confidence of the community. He resided in Charleston the most of his life, and was seldom out of the county. He married, in the year 1825 or 1826, a sister of the late James. C. McFarland; Mrs. Welch is still living, and occupies the old family residence on Summers street in Charleston. Mr. Welch died April 16, 1856, aged 67. He was universally beloved and respected. Five of his children survived him, having lost three in infancy. His eldest son, James, lost his life in the late war, at the battle of Scary, on the 17th July, 1861.

Neither of these brothers—Levi and John—were professors of religion, or members of any church; but their humane and benevolent characters were well known. No poor man or indigent person, was ever spurned or driven from their doors; acts of charity and benevolence were always bestowed by them, unsparingly and without stint. The excellency of these men was well known and appreciated by those with whom they came in contact, and not by a few still living, who knew them well.

#### MAJOR ALEXANDER T. LAIDLEY.

Alexander T. Laidley was born in Morgantown, Western Virginia, with a twin sister, (who died in infancy,) April 14, 1807. His father, James G. Laidley, was the eldest of eight children of Thomas Laidley, born in Philadelphia, about 1780, and in 1806 he married Harriet B. Quarrier, a daughter of Alexander Quarrier, born in Richmond, Virginia, June 3, 1787. Thomas Laidley emigrated from Scotland to America, and arrived at New York in the year 1774. The name in Scotland was originally Laidlaw, but was corrupted to Laidley; and to this day there are Laidleys in Scotland, in and about Edinburgh and Glasgow, descendants of the old families of Laidlaw.

Thomas Laidley resided in Philadelphia after the close of the war, and was induced, by the late Albert Gallatin, to take a partnership with him in the sale of maize on the Monongahela river, and about the year 1789 moved his family to Morgantown. He represented Monongalia county

in the Virginia Legislature in 1797-8, and again in 1800-1, and espoused the cause of the Federalists in those exciting times. He was a member of the Legislature at the time of the passage of the celebrated resolutions of 1798, taking ground in opposition to their adoption. Thomas Laidley was educated for the bar in Petersburg, Virginia, under the late Chancellor Wythe. Upon being admitted to the bar, he located in Parkersburg, the county seat of the then new county of Wood, about the year 1802. He held several offices connected with the courts of that county, and represented the county in the Legislature two successive years. When war was declared against Great Britain, June, 1812, he raised a volunteer company of riflemen, entered the army, and served in the Northwest under Generals Leftwich and Harrison. He was brevetted to the rank of Major for distinguished services on the battle-field. It is related of him that when in command of his company, in a sanguinary fight with a band of Indians, seeing his men under some fear, he seized a rifle and shot one of the savages, who falling before him, so encouraged his company, that they fought with greater bravery, and won the battle. He died at Parkersburg September 5, 1821.

At the age of 13, Alexander went to Cabell county to reside with his uncle, the late John Laidley, and entered the Clerk's office under the late John Samuels, the Clerk of the Cabell Courts from the formation of the county, in 1813-14, until his death, about the year 1859. He resided in Cabell until June, 1824, when he came to Charleston, and went into the Clerk's office under his uncle, the late A. W. Quarrier. He remained in the Clerk's office about six years, discharging his duties efficiently and well. In 1830 he kept store for Summers & Whitteker in Malden, occupying the position of book-keeper and salesman. In 1831 he occupied a similar position in the dry goods and grocery store of Carr & Turner. In October of the same year he removed to Wheeling. After his arrival in Wheeling he did business for Kurn & McKee, commission merchants, until February, 1832, when, a vacancy occurring in the office of Deputy Clerk of the Circuit Court of Ohio county, he engaged with Mr. Chapline, the Clerk, as his Deputy, and also in the same



capacity under the Clerk of the County Court. Mr. Chapline's time expiring in May, 1838, Mr. Laidley was appointed by Judge Fry to the responsible position of Clerk of the Court, which office he held for two terms of seven years each. The Constitution of the State, of 1850-1, providing for the election of clerks by the popular vote, Mr. Laidley being a candidate for the office which he had filled so long and well, was defeated at the election in 1852, by a Democratic candidate.

In 1854 he removed to Kanawha, where he has ever since resided. In this county he held the office of Master Commissioner in Chancery up to the beginning of the war, under appointments by Judges Summers and McComas. Major Laidley enjoyed, while in office at Wheeling, the reputation of being among the very best clerks in the Old Dominion.

In 1872 he applied to the Judges of the Court of Appeals, who were elected under the New Constitution of West Virginia, for the position of Clerk of that Court. He had the recommendation of most of the older members of the Bar throughout the State, and others residing in different parts of the country. He did not rest his claims upon any devotion for or service to party, but simply his qualifications for the office, and being a citizen born and raised in the State. The Court saw proper to disregard claims for fitness and capacity, and bestowed the office upon a citizen from another State, who had but recently come to West Virginia. He thought that, all other things being equal, and as there was not nor could be any doubt as to his qualification for the office, preference should have been given to an old citizen in the selection of an incumbent for the position. But the Judges acted otherwise—and gave it to one who had done the most for party—a gentleman, however, of character and ability.

Major Laidley has been twice married. By his first marriage, in September, 1835, to Miss Blaine, a cousin of James G. Blaine, late Speaker of the House of Representatives, he had one child, the late Capt. R. Q. Laidley, who died in this city in February, 1873. He had no children by his second marriage. His education was somewhat limited, he never having attended school since he was twelve years old; still he acquired a pretty thorough knowledge of the English language, by application in

county and circuit court clerks' offices. His special fort is in an office of that kind, where he always excelled.

Major Laidley is now nearly three-score years and ten ; is in good health, and is quite active and vigorous for a man of his years.

#### JAMES NEVIUS.

James Nevius, the well-known blacksmith of Charleston, was born August 11, 1806, in Rockbridge county, Virginia. His parents were poor, and as Virginia had no common schools, his education was necessarily limited. He, however, obtained a knowledge of the ordinary English branches, and was, in his way, competent to keep his own accounts, and manage his own business.

In 1840 Mr. Nevius started westward. Arriving in Greenbrier county, and being favorably impressed with that beautiful and fertile section, he located there, and established himself in business—blacksmithing. He commenced work in a blacksmith shop in 1822, in his native county, and when he opened a shop in Lewisburg, Greenbrier county, he had mastered his trade, and was pronounced a number-one mechanic. Shortly after his arrival at Lewisburg, he was united in marriage with Miss Jane McClelland, a resident of that county, and a lady of solid character and worth.

In October, 1843, Mr. Nevius and family removed to Kanawha. The day after their arrival in Charleston, he began work in a blacksmith's shop, which was situated where C. J. Botkin's store now stands, on Kanawha street, near the lower ferry. The next year he bought a lot on Goshorn street, between Kanawha and Virginia streets, built a blacksmith's shop, and has continued at the anvil, in that old building, till the present time.

Mr. Nevius is a man of stalwart frame, and unusual physical force. He has had a constitution of extraordinary endurance. For a number of years he actually labored an average of nineteen hours out of every twenty-four, from Monday morning until Saturday night. He had the reputation of being the best horse-shoer in the Kanawha Valley, and bears that honor to this day. He never lacked for something to do, and

being both healthy and industrious, he was always at his post from early morn till late at night.

Mr. Nevius is now upwards of seventy years of age, and never loses a day from his shop. If it were not for weakness in his limbs, occasioned by standing at the anvil for so many years, he could do as much work to-day as he could turn out forty years ago.

James Nevius is a man of positive convictions. He does his own thinking, acts honorably in all of his dealings, and is truthful, reliable and upright. He has been a consistent member of the Presbyterian church for nearly a half century, is a good citizen, and is personally liked by every man who ever knew him.

#### COLONEL JAMES ATKINSON.

James Atkinson, son of George and Sarah Atkinson, was born in Kanawha county, Virginia, (now West Virginia,) May 27, 1811. His parents were poor, and unable to properly educate their children; yet the subject of this sketch managed to procure a fair English education, and thereby qualified himself for nearly all branches of business. He spent the greater portion of his earlier life upon a farm, as an ordinary laborer. After he grew to manhood, he introduced himself into business circles as a constable. He very soon established a reputation both for honesty and attentiveness to business, and accordingly had all the collecting he could conveniently attend to. At the age of twenty-five he commenced work at the carpenter's trade, which he followed for several years. He was a good architect, and excelled as a framer of large buildings.

About the year 1840, he, in company with two other gentlemen, loaded a large barge with poplar lumber and floated it to New Orleans. At that place, and other points on the Mississippi river, they spent nearly two years, working at the carpenter's and joiner's trade. After his return to Kanawha, Mr. Atkinson united in marriage with Miriam Rader, daughter of George Rader, of Nicholas county, Virginia. Eight children were the result of their union; all of whom are still living, except one, who died April 27, 1874.

In 1842 Mr. Atkinson engaged in the business of a boat-builder, which he kept up for about three years, when he was compelled to abandon it, on account of impaired health, superinduced by over-work. He purchased a farm on Elk river, five miles from Charleston, and moved upon it, in the spring of 1845, where he continued to reside until the time of his death.

Shortly after his removal to the country, he was elected a Justice of the Peace; and was continued in that position, with occasional intermissions, for nearly a quarter of a century. As a Justice he was universally liked. He always heard the evidence on both sides of every case, and then decided as he thought right, without regard to technicalities of law; and in ninety-nine cases out of every hundred, he decided exactly right. If all of our Justices would set aside technicalities, and decide as their judgment directs, they would scarcely ever fail to do right, and render satisfaction to suitors.

He held the position of a deputy Sheriff of Kanawha county under Robert H. Early, John Slack, Sr., and John Slack, Jr., and was high Sheriff in 1861-2. In each of these positions he did his work honorably and well, and was universally esteemed by all with whom he had business relations. During the war he and the late Greenbury Slack were engaged in mercantile pursuits in the city of Charleston, which, like most enterprises at that time, proved lucrative. They continued in that business until the fall of 1865, when the firm of Slack & Atkinson was dissolved by mutual consent.

In early life Mr. Atkinson connected himself with the M. E. Church, and continued a true and valued member until the hour of his death. He always gave more towards the support of the gospel than any half-dozen other men in the community. His house was regarded as the regular stopping-place for ministers; and but few nights passed for many years without some preacher of the gospel being sheltered under his roof.

On a sultry afternoon, in August, 1864, as he was riding down Elk river, he called at a neighbor's house, who tendered him a glass of fresh cider. Unfortunately, caustic soda was unintentionally given him for

cider. He took a swallow of it, and it was a miracle that it did not produce instant death. After many months of confinement to his bed, he at last recovered strength enough to walk around, but was never himself again. Instead of a stalwart man of two hundred and twenty pounds in weight, his frame became shattered and weakened—was in fact nothing but skin and bones. After this affliction, he could never swallow anything but thin soups or gruel. In this condition he lingered for two years, and on the 11th of September, 1866, in the 55th year of his age, he departed this life in the triumphs of a living faith, and is now an associate with the ransomed of the blessed.

CAPTAIN SNELLING C. FARLEY.

Captain Farley was born four miles from Paris, in Bourbon county, Kentucky, February 3, 1806. His father lived upon a farm, and when the subject of this sketch was seven years of age, he moved to Kanawha county, Virginia, where his father-in-law, Mr. Forquerian, formerly of Bedford county, Virginia, had located in the spring of 1813. After his arrival in Kanawha, Mr. Farley continued in agricultural pursuits for a few years, when he located in Charleston, that he might be better enabled to educate his children.

In Charleston young Farley attended the Mercer Academy, under the instructions of Mr. Jacob Rand, who was a leading educator in the Kanawha Valley at that time. At the age of fifteen years, he entered the tailor shop of Mr. James Truslow, in Charleston, and continued in that business until 1826, when he had learned thoroughly every department of the business.

After he had completed his apprenticeship at the tailor's bench, Mr. Farley engaged as a deputy Sheriff under Col. Andrew Donnally, who was at that time Sheriff of the county. He continued in that business for nearly four years, and gave satisfaction both to his employer and the people.

In 1844 Captain Farley purchased an interest in the side wheel steamer *Cumberland Valley*, which ran between Charleston and Nashville, Tennessee, and took charge of her as Captain. This was the beginning of

"a life on the river," which seemed to be his natural business, and which he kept up for twenty-seven years. Ever since the writer can remember, Captain Farley has been regarded as the leading steamboatman of the Great Kanawha river. He was neat in his dress and appearance, and was courteous and accommodating—just the make-up of a gentleman who would be popular as a river Captain. He was known by nearly every business man along the Kanawha, lower Ohio, and Cumberland valleys, having had more or less business transactions with them during his twenty-seven years "on the water."

From 1844 to 1876, Captain Farley was Master of the following named steamers—in fact, he never filled any other position on a steamboat except the office of commander: The *Cumberland Valley*, which plied between Charleston and Nashville; *A. W. Quarrier*, running from Charleston to Cincinnati; *Allen Collier*, in the same trade; *Aurilla Wood*, which ran between Charleston and Wheeling; *Hermon*, in the trade from Paducah, Kentucky, to St. Louis, Missouri. The *Hermon* also ran two years on the Wabash river, under command of Captain Farley. The *Ellen Gray* was a neat little stern-wheel steamer, which he ran for some time in the Charleston and Cincinnati trade. He made fifty-one trips in one year with this steamer, a round trip requiring one week; *Kanawha Valley*, Nos. 1 and 2, in the Cincinnati and Kanawha river trade. He was in command of the No. 2, when she was destroyed by General H. A. Wise, of the Confederate army, in 1861. He built the *T. J. Pickett*, for the Cannelton Coal and Oil Company, and commanded her in the trade from Cannelton to Louisville, for about twelve months. The next steamer that he commanded was the *Mollie Norton*, a large side-wheel steamer, which he ran in the Cincinnati trade. The next one was the *Cottage No. 2*, which he ran a portion of the time in the Charleston and Gallipolis trade, and a considerable time also in the Cincinnati trade. The last vessel that he had charge of was the *R. W. Skillinger*, which he ran in the Charleston and Cincinnati trade up to 1871, when he disposed of her, abandoned the river, and has kept on land ever since.

River men, as a class, break down in health in early life. Captain Farley, however, seems to be an exception to the rule, for he is now in

the seventy-first year of his age, and his health is tolerably good ; his appearance indicates an age not exceeding fifty-five or sixty.

JAMES ALEXANDER LEWIS.

James A. Lewis was born near Sweet Springs, Virginia, in the year 1794. He was the only son of Alexander Lewis, who died during the infancy of James. Alexander's father—James A's grand-father—was William Lewis, a brother of General Andrew and Colonel Charles Lewis, and an officer in the Revolutionary war. James. A. Lewis was educated principally at the then famous school of Mr. Crutchfield, in Virginia. About the year 1811 or 1812 he went into the office of his uncle, Dr. Charles Lewis, and commenced the study of medicine. After prosecuting his studies for a year or two, he was seized with the war spirit which then pervaded the land. He entered the army as Ensign in the 20th Regiment, United States Infantry, and was afterwards promoted to a Lieutenantcy in the same regiment, which rank and position he held at the disbanding of the forces. His land warrant, issued under act of Congress, 1850, for services in the war of 1812, is still in the hands of his children, never having been sold or located.

Returning home after the war, he resumed the study of medicine, and continued in his uncle's office up to 1816. When he was about twenty-two years of age, he married Prudentia Wilson, of Bath county, Virginia, a lady of estimable character, and great moral worth. In 1817 the young couple started on horse back for the then distant West—Kentucky. Henry Clay was a favorite pupil of old Father Crutchfield, and when Mr. Lewis started to Kentucky, the old gentleman gave him a very elaborate letter of introduction and recommendation to Mr. Clay—who had previously gone to Kentucky and had already begun to make his mark there. As Mr. Lewis never got beyond Kanawha, he never delivered the letter, but kept it during his lifetime, and left it at his death in the possession of his family. Reaching Kanawha, they were much pleased with the country, the people, and the prospects of its future growth and development. They concluded to rest here for a while. At that time there was an apparent need of a good school in Charleston, and the peo-

ple induced Mr. Lewis to abandon, for that year, his intention of going to Kentucky, and to open a school here. His school was large and successful. His young wife, who was also well educated, assisted him in teaching. There are yet living in Kanawha a few persons who were his pupils, nearly sixty years ago ; among whom are Colonel Joel Ruffner, Mrs. Caroline W. Quarrier, Mrs. Roxalana Smith and others. The old house, with the riven oak weather-boards, standing on the river bank near Truslow street, which has been alluded to in another chapter, was built by James A. Lewis under peculiar circumstances. He was teaching school in Charleston—and in those days a school-day consisted of more hours than in these times. Schools *took up* early and *held in* late, with an hour for dinner. Some one had built the foundation, and had partly put up the frame, at which stage Mr. Lewis purchased it, and with his own hands, working during the hours he was not teaching, completed his dwelling—plastering and all—although he had never done a day's work at any mechanical trade before. The old house stands there to-day a monument to his skill, industry and perseverance.

After teaching for some two years, in Charleston, he purchased a stock of goods of Colonel Joseph Lovell, and launched out into the business of merchandising, which he continued uninterruptedly, and with moderate success, for more than forty years. In fact, he continued in the same business until the time of his death, which occurred November 2, 1860.

He was appointed postmaster of Kanawha Court-house about 1820, and held that position for about thirty-two years, when he was forced, by declining health, to resign it, in October, 1852. He was so kind and accommodating that he pleased everybody, and although it was considered a political office, no one could get it from him.

In politics he was always a staunch Whig, but was never much of a politician. He was for many years a leading member of the Presbyterian church, and died in the triumphs of a living faith. His wife survived him nearly seven years. She died at the house of her daughter, Mrs. Wm. Frazier, at the Alum Springs, in Rockbridge county, Virginia, in the summer of 1867.



Mr. Lewis and wife had twelve children, only four of whom are now living, viz : William A., who resides on the Kanawha, near St. Albans; Susan M., wife of William Frazier, who resides at the Alum Springs, Rockbridge county, Virginia ; Captain James F. Lewis, who resides in Charleston, and Edward Lewis, who resides on the Long Ridge, in Roane county.

JUDGE MATTHEW DUNBAR.

One of the most distinguished, as well as most honorable lawyers of the Kanawha bar, of the last generation, was Matthew Dunbar. He was amiable, honorable and exemplary, and did all of his work in open daylight. He disdained anything like trickery in the practice of his profession ; and as a general thing, he refused to have anything to do with the defense of cases, which, in his judgment, were violations of law. He came as near living up to the Golden Rule as any other member of his profession, in this or any other age. He was honest in politics and the practice of his profession, as well as in the transaction of private business. It was his opinion that if a man could be honest in the one case, he could be so in the other ; and his life was an exemplification of the truthfulness of the proposition. Although an ardent Whig, Judge Dunbar had but little to do with politics. He refused, under all circumstances, to accept political offices, and devoted his entire time to the practice of his profession.

Judge Dunbar was born in Monroe county, Virginia, April 3, 1791, and was educated under the tutorage of the late John McElhenny, D. D., of Lewisburg, Greenbrier county. He came to Kanawha about 1815, and commenced the study of the law in the office of James Wilson, Esq., the Prosecuting Attorney of the county. After a thorough preparation, he was admitted as an attorney of the Kanawha bar in 1818, and by close application to his books, and a thorough examination of his cases before he went into Court, he took a leading rank in a short time after his admission to the bar.

The first and only office which he ever held, except that of a Circuit Judgeship, was Prosecuting Attorney for Kanawha county. He was re-

elected to that important position for many years without intermission, and was allowed only to give it up when he was elected by the Legislature as Judge of this judicial circuit, in 1848. He held the position of Circuit Judge for a number of years, until he was forced to resign it, on account of failing health, and the advance of age.

He united with the Presbyterian church, in 1830, and continued an earnest and consistent member until the time of his death, which took place in 1859. His funeral was attended by almost the entire town, while his remains were laid to rest in the presence of many hundreds of his fellow-citizens, who deeply mourned his death. His wife still survives, and spends her time at the homes of her daughters, Mrs. Ebenezer Baines, in Charleston, and Mrs. James L. McLean, at Winfield, in Putnam county. She is a lady well-beloved by all those who have the pleasure of her acquaintance.

HON. JOHN D. LEWIS.

John D. Lewis was born on the Cow Pasture river, in Bath county, Virginia, twelve miles southeast of the Warm Springs, June 6, 1800. His father, Charles Cameron Lewis, a son of Colonel Charles Lewis, who was killed in 1774, in the battle at Point Pleasant between the whites and Indians, removed from Bath county, in 1802, to a point on the Ohio river four miles above the mouth of the Kanawha. His farm at that place was beautiful level land, bordering on the Ohio river, and was quite productive. Shortly after his removal to the Ohio Valley, his health failed, and he died in the Spring of 1803. In 1807 Mrs. Lewis was united in marriage with Captain James Wilson, and in 1810 they removed to the Kanawha Valley, locating where General Lewis Ruffner now resides, six miles above Charleston. After remaining there for a few years, they made an exchange of property with Colonel David Ruffner, and removed to Charleston, to the Brooks property, better known as the Clendennin block-house, or fort.

The subject of this sketch resided with his step-father the greater portion of time, until he grew to manhood, although he spent several months each year with his brother, on the farm on the Ohio river, which

had been jointly left to them at their father's death. While he was growing up, he attended the Mercer Academy, in Charleston, which was presided over by Dr. Henry Ruffner, the first year; the second year the school was taught by General Lewis Ruffner. He also went to school to Francis Crutchfield, one year in Bath county, and one year in Charleston. Mr. Crutchfield was a noted educator of Bath county, and was prevailed upon to spend one year in Kanawha to teach a private class of advanced young men, Mr. Lewis being one of the number.

Mr. Lewis began a business life on the Kanawha by clerking for Messrs. Dickinson & Shrewsbury, salt-makers, in Tinkersville, five miles above Charleston. He remained with them three years, from 1826 to 1829, when he engaged as salesman in the store of Hewitt, Ruffner & Co., who were also salt-makers, in the same vicinity, remaining with them about one year. He was engaged in business a short time for Dickinson, Ruffner & Co.; and in 1831, he bought property, where the landing of the Campbell's Creek Coal Company now is, and, after putting it in order, commenced the manufacture of salt on his own account. From the outset his business proved lucrative, and in a few years thereafter he occupied a leading position among the business men of the Kanawha Valley.

In 1838 he married a daughter of Joel Shrewsbury, Sr. She died in 1843, since which time Mr. Lewis has been twice married, the last time in 1874.

During the spring of 1834, Mr. Lewis purchased the property where he now resides, immediately above the mouth of Campbell's creek, constructed a furnace, and began the manufacture of salt, which business he continued, in a successful manner, until a few years ago.

Mr. Lewis was an ardent Whig until the dissolution of that party, occasioned by the war in 1861, when he united with the Democratic party, with which he still co-operates. He never sought political offices. His great object in life was to make his business successful, and the immense estate which he now represents is proof of his capacity as a business man. He, however, held the position of a Justice of the Peace for a number of years, acquitting himself, in all cases tried before him, honorably and satisfactorily. In 1871 he was elected to the House of Dele-

gates from Kanawha county, and served his fellow-citizens with credit and distinction.

Mr. Lewis is now past seventy-six years of age, and is apparently in good health. He has been a man of unusual physical strength, but his stalwart frame, a few years since, was forced to yield under the pressure of a rheumatic disease; and instead of carrying himself erect, as was his manner in younger years, his body is now considerably stooped. He spends his time principally superintending his large landed estate, lying in most every portion of the county, which is principally under lease to tenants. He is, however, frequently seen upon the streets of Charleston, and his step is as quick and elastic as it was a decade or more ago.

ABIA REECE.

Abia Reece who resides at Mud Bridge, in Cabell county, is the oldest man in the Kanawha Valley, except Israel Rue, who resides on Davis creek, seven miles from Charleston. He was born in Bedford county, Virginia, February 15, 1784, and removed to Kanawha in 1791. He was, therefore, one of the first settlers of the Kanawha Valley—perhaps has been a resident of the Valley longer than any other person now living. Upon his first arrival in the county, he located at the Mouth of Kelly's creek, twenty miles above Charleston, where he resided for seven years. During his stay at that place, he had several encounters with the Indians, but always managed to escape unharmed. He removed to Teays' Valley in 1798, and has resided upon a large and beautiful farm, in a bend of Mud river, till the present time. He is in good health, and, with the exception of a lameness in one of his hips, occasioned by an ox running over him a few years since, is unusually vigorous and active for a man of his advanced age.

ANDREW H. BEACH.

Samuel Beach came from Rockbridge county to Kanawha in 1800, and located near the Upper Falls of Coal river. He entered as a volunteer, in the war of 1812 with Great Britain. After his discharge at Norfolk, he started home. While visiting friends in Prince Edward county, he took sick, and died in the fall of 1813.

Andrew H. Beach, son of Samuel Beach, was born in Kanawha county, February 11, 1803. He was brought up on a farm near the Upper Falls of Coal river, where he remained until he was twenty-one years of age. During his minority, he attended schools taught at different times by Joseph J. Strawn, E. G. Simmons, John M. Jordan, Isaac Ashworth, John Campbell, Daniel Pauley and others, all of whom were pioneer school teachers in this, at that time, western country.

Mr. Beach learned the trade of a shoe-maker, and opened a shop in Malden, in 1825, where he remained in business for four years. He then removed to Charleston, and carried on the business of shoe and boot making for upwards of twenty-five years.

For ten years he was a "peace officer" of the town of Charleston, in the capacity of Constable, deputy Sheriff, and Marshal of the corporation. For many years past he has been engaged as the proprietor of a hotel, and at present is the owner of the Kanawha House, on Kanawha street.

Mr. Beach is about five feet seven inches tall, and his average weight for the last half century has been about one hundred and forty pounds. He has been a cripple for the past eight years, occasioned by a fall into a cellar, resulting in the crushing of one of his feet and ankles. He walks about with the assistance of a cane, but will never recover from the injuries received from the fall.

#### JOHN MCCONIHAY.

John McConihay was one of the earliest settlers of the county. He purchased a large boundary of land on the Kanawha river, from ten to fifteen miles above Charleston, which was valuable for its mineral contents, as well as for farming purposes. He was a good business man, and by industry and frugality managed to accumulate a handsome estate. He is now eighty-four years of age, and is remarkably active for a man of his years. He resides upon his farm at Lewiston, fifteen miles above Charleston, and attends to his business as regularly and constantly as if he were in the prime of life.

## GENERAL LEWIS RUFFNER.

Among all of the noted men born and raised in the Kanawha Valley, none of them possessed a better intellect than did Lewis Ruffner. He is a man of unusual breadth of intellect and cultivation of mind, and has been a leading citizen of Kanawha for over fifty years. He was born October 1, 1793, in a large log mansion immediately in the rear of the Clendennin fort, in Charleston. His grandfather, Joseph Ruffner, bought the bottom land from the mouth of Elk to Wilson's hollow, in 1795, and moved upon it in the fall of 1796. Joseph Ruffner had six sons and one daughter, as follows: David, Daniel, Tobias, Joseph, Samuel Abram and Eve, who married Nehemiah Woods, referred to in a former chapter. David Ruffner was the father of the subject of this sketch; and also of Rev. Henry Ruffner, D. D., LL.D., a distinguished Presbyterian clergyman, and at one time President of Washington College, Lexington, Virginia; Mrs. Ann Putney, the wife of the late Dr. R. E. Putney, and Mrs. Susan Fuqua, wife of Moses Fuqua, late of Hannibal, Missouri. Daniel Ruffner was the father of Charles, Joel, James, Augustus, Andrew, the wife of David Ruffner and the wife of N. V. Wilson. Tobias Ruffner was the father of John, Isaac, Silas, Benjamin F., Jonas, and two daughters.

The subject of this sketch first attended school in Charleston, taught by Herbert P. Gaines, and afterwards by Levi Welch and others. In 1808 he attended a select school, one year, taught by Professor Duvall, on the farm of Robert Johnson—father of Hon. Richard M. Johnson—at the crossing of Elk Horn Creek, Scott county, Kentucky. In 1812 he went to Lewisburg, and entered the high school taught by Rev. John McElhenny, where he remained until February, 1815, when peace was declared with Great Britain. He then went to Cincinnati, and entered an academy, where he remained one year, pursuing his studies. From Cincinnati, in the latter part of 1816, he went to Lexington, Virginia, and entered Washington College, where he remained two years. In 1818 he returned to Charleston, and taught school for one year. In 1820 he commenced business as a salt manufacturer in a small wood furnace in

the Salines, which business he has kept up, with occasional intermissions, until the present time.

In 1821, realizing the incompleteness of a kettle furnace, with wood fuel, Mr. Ruffner built a new one, on the site of his present furnace, and used coal as a fuel. This was a great improvement, in the saving of time and expense, and was an important step in the line of improvements which led to others and still others that proved a blessing to all those engaged in the manufacture of salt in the Great Kanawha Valley.

In 1823 Mr. Ruffner took charge of his father's property and settled up his business. In 1825 he was elected to the Legislature of Virginia, and was returned in 1826 and 1828. November 2, 1826, he was united in marriage with a daughter of the late Joel Shrewsbury. In 1828 he was appointed a Magistrate for Kanawha county, which position he held without intermission, until 1845, when he removed to Louisville, Kentucky, and on leaving the State, tendered his resignation as a Justice. He remained in Kentucky until 1857, acting as agent for the sale of Kanawha salt, when he returned to his old home, near Malden, and resumed the manufacture of salt.

After serving three terms in the Legislature, Mr. Ruffner, from 1828 to 1860, ceased to mingle in politics, and gave his time and attention exclusively to business, although solicited to become a candidate for important official positions. In May, 1860, he was again elected to the Legislature of Virginia. About that time the war broke out, and Mr. Ruffner, contrary to the wishes of nearly all of his relatives and friends, took the side of the Union, and exhibited unusual courage in standing up and boldly defending his country, and the flag of our nationality. In June of that year he was invited by leading citizens, from other portions of the State, to meet them at the city of Wheeling, to take action preliminary to the restoring of Virginia to the Union, she having passed the ordinance of secession in April preceding. He went to Wheeling, and his courage, education and ability enabled him to take a leading position in that Convention of noble Virginians which restored the government of Virginia to the Union. In the fall of 1860 he was elected to the Legislature by his loyal fellow-citizens of Kanawha county, and was re-elected

each year consecutively until 1865, when he declined to serve longer. In 1863 he was elected as one of the delegates from Kanawha county to the Convention which framed the Constitution for the new State of West Virginia, and, as in the Convention of 1860, he took a prominent and leading rank. In the same year he was appointed by the Legislature to the high position of Major General of militia, for the State of West Virginia. He was, about that time, tendered the position of Colonel of a regiment in the Federal army, if he desired to enter the service as a volunteer, but he declined to accept it, on account of the large business interests which he represented in the Kanawha Valley.

Too much praise cannot be given to General Ruffner for his devotion to the Union when the dark storm-cloud of war hung low in our political horizon. His conduct at that time not only exhibited patriotism and love of country in a very large degree, but it showed that he possessed an unusual amount of courage,—daring, in the face of an overwhelming armed opposition, to urge his fellow-citizens, less informed, to stand firmly by their country and their flag. Scores and hundreds of our citizens heeded the advice given them by General Ruffner, in that great emergency, and stood by the ship that had borne them up safely, as a nation and a people, for nearly one hundred years.

General Ruffner connected himself with the Presbyterian church in Charleston, in December, 1844, under the ministry of Rev. Dr. Stuart Robinson, of Kentucky, and has remained a devoted and consistent member until the present time. His health is moderately good, and the encroachments of age do not seem to make very decided impressions upon him.

RACHEL E. TOMPKINS.

Mrs. R. E. Tompkins, wife of the late William Tompkins, was born in Pennsylvania in 1804. Her father, Captain Noah Grant, was a soldier in the Revolutionary war, serving valiantly until its close. He was one of the party who threw the tea overboard in Boston harbor. He moved to Maysville, Kentucky, in 1811, where he resided until his death, which took place in 1820. After the death of her father, the subject of this



sketch lived with her brother, the late Peter Grant, who was so well known to all of the old citizens of Kanawha as the principal man in the salt manufacturing firm of Armstrong, Grant & Co., which was founded in January, 1827. She made her first visit to Kanawha in August, 1827, to her niece, Mrs. James Hewitt, a daughter of Peter Grant. Mr. Hewitt was at that time a resident of Malden, doing business for the company of Armstrong, Grant & Co., of which he was a stockholder and director.

In 1831 she was united in marriage with William Tompkins, who was at that time manufacturing salt at the Burning Springs furnace, ten miles above Charleston, and had, by industrious application to business, accumulated a handsome estate. Mr. Tompkins was one of the pioneer salt manufacturers of the Kanawha Valley. He came here in April, 1815, aged twenty-two years, after having fought his country's battles in the war of 1812-14, and first obtained employment as a blacksmith, at a small salary. This, however, was increased annually, enabling him to lay by a sufficiency of means to purchase a small interest in a salt furnace. He applied himself strictly and diligently to the business of salt making, until he became able to purchase a furnace of his own. He not only made a pecuniary success of his business as a salt manufacturer, but he was the inventor of a number of appurtenances and improvements in furnaces and salt wells, which are still in use by all salt manufacturers in the Kanawha Valley. Mr. Tompkins was a man of great character as well as of great energy. By his scrupulous integrity, and promptness in all of his business engagements, he won and ever retained the confidence of all his associates and neighbors.

In 1844, he applied the gas of the burning spring to his furnace, and thereby reduced the expense of manufacturing salt to a price not exceeding one cent per bushel. He resided at the Burning Spring furnace, in the house now occupied by his son, William H. Tompkins, till 1845, when he moved to Cedar Grove, at the mouth of Kelly's creek, twenty miles above Charleston, where he died in May, 1857, and where Mrs. Tompkins still resides. Mr. Tompkins never aspired to or held a public office, yet he often held positions of trust for the salt companies, such as hip-master, traveling agent, treasurer, and was always one of the Board  
s

of Directors of the Kanawha Salt Company, which was a combination of all the salt manufacturers of the valley.

Since the death of her husband, Mrs. Tompkins has continued to reside at the old Kelly's creek homestead, which by the way, is one of the finest farms on the Kanawha. In speaking of her experience during the late war, she used this language: "Living in the country, with armies moving, was not only annoying, but extremely hazardous; and but for the safeguard furnished me by General U. S. Grant, which I frequently had occasion to use as a weapon of defense, I would have suffered even more than I did in pecuniary loss and anxiety."

Mrs. Tompkins is a lady of unusual good sense, and possesses quite a business-like turn of mind, as is shown by the following language used in a recent letter to the author, which is peculiarly her own: "My recollections of the first days of Kanawha are those fraught with prosperity and happiness for all whose industry rendered them deserving. Those were days when our labor was not brought in competition with the pauper prices paid by foreigners. A healthy tariff then was our protection; and my observations have been, that old Kanawha has prospered and bankrupted just as this Protection has been afforded and denied us."

Mrs. Tompkins is the sister of Mr. Jesse Grant, the father of General Ulysses S. Grant, the present President of the United States. She is intimately acquainted with the President, and is very much attached to him. Very naturally, of course, she is proud of the fact that her nephew has been twice elected to the highest position in the gift of his countrymen.

Mrs. Tompkins is the mother of eight children, all of whom are living, and are respected and deserving citizens.

WILLIAM REDFORD COX.

William R. Cox was born in Amherst county, Virginia, March 5, 1788. When he was but three years of age his father died, and ten years later his mother likewise passed away. William was the youngest of a large family, and the estate which his father had left to his family was almost absorbed by the elder brothers, under the excuse that they had to care for the younger members of the family, and should therefore be en-

titled to the lions share of the property. Such conduct was not satisfactory to William, and he resolved that he would leave home and care for himself. This he did when quite young. He went to Richmond, and engaged as a laborer on the line of keel-boats running on the James river between Richmond and Lynchburg. After laboring for about a year as a boatman, and having laid by a considerable sum of money, one afternoon, while his boat was lying at the Richmond wharf, two negro boys were being sold by an auctioneer—one of them was lame, and the other had but one eye. The price at which they were going was so low that Mr. Cox became their purchaser, at remarkably small figures. He took them with him on a keel-boat, and very shortly found that he had made a good investment of his money. A year or two later he came west, bringing his two negro boys with him; and in 1815 he arrived in Kanawha. Here he found an excellent field in which to labor; and from the first his business undertakings proved lucrative. For a time he worked as a laborer at a salt furnace in the Salines; but the proprietors, the Steele brothers, seeing the energy and enterprise displayed by young Cox, gave him the position of overseer of their furnace. He continued in the capacity of manager for the Messrs. Steele for several years, until he had accumulated, from his own labor and that of his two slaves, a considerable sum of money. He had, by this time, become pretty well schooled in business, and therefore determined to start out for himself. He bought property in Charleston, and each year made it a point to add something to it, so that by the time he had reached the meridian of life, he had accumulated a comfortable and handsome estate.

He was a man of limited education, but of good sense and extraordinarily good judgment. He was honorable and upright in all of his dealings; and among business men his word was as good as his bond. He had a pleasant disposition, and was revered and respected by all of his associates. He died September 8, 1843, and his remains are enclosed by a stone vault on the brow of the high hill which bears his name, in the rear of Charleston, and over them stands a neat stone monument, which can be seen at the distance of several miles from every direction. No more beautiful spot for the repose of the dead could have been selected.

## ADAM AULTZ.

Adam Aultz was among the early settlers of Kanawha county. He was born in the eastern portion of the State, and about sixty years ago came to Kanawha county and located on the State road leading from the Kanawha river across the country to Pocatalico river, about midway between the two rivers. He opened up a beautiful farm, which he cultivated in good style, and upon which he resided until the time of his death, which occurred March 17, 1868. He was a good citizen, and an honest man; and left behind him many relatives and friends to mourn his loss. At the time of his death, he was upwards of eighty years of age. His heirs reside upon the old homestead, and, like their father, are good citizens, and are well-to-do in worldly estate.

## JAMES RUFFNER.

James and Andrew Ruffner were twin brothers, born in Charleston, December 5, 1807. Andrew was a bachelor, and died at the residence of his father at Fairfield, Ohio, in 1860. James lived on the old homestead, where Silas Ruffner now resides, two miles above Charleston, until 1860, when he abandoned farming and moved to Charleston. In 1826 he married Miss Martha Morton, of Greenup, Kentucky. They had four children—two sons, Meredith P. and Andrew L., who are now engaged in the grocery business in Charleston, and two daughters, one of whom died at the age of seven years, and the other married W. H. Hogeman, Esq., a prominent member of the Charleston bar.

Mr. Ruffner spent the greater portion of his life on a farm, but for several years, in partnership with two or three of his brothers, he was engaged in the manufacture of salt. He was a good business man, and succeeded in all of his undertakings. He was strictly honest, and never failed to meet any and all of his obligations. He died in Charleston, February 6, 1867, and was mourned by many relatives and friends.

## COLONEL CHARLES RUFFNER.

Charles Ruffner, son of Daniel Ruffner, was the eldest of six brothers. He was born in Charleston in 1800, and has passed the greater portion of

his life in the county of his nativity. He spent a number of years in manufacturing salt, and was for a long time general salt inspector for the Kanawha Salt Company. He has resided in Cabell county for the last eight or ten years, and is in the enjoyment of excellent health, with a fair prospect of a long lease of life.

JOSEPH BIBBY.

Mr. Bibby was born near Lancaster, England, April 12, 1805. A portion of his early life was spent on a farm, but at the age of sixteen years he was placed in a flour mill, where he remained for ten years. When twenty-six years of age, and shortly after his marriage, he resolved to emigrate to the United States; and accordingly started on board of a sailing vessel for the "Western World," arriving at Norfolk, in May, 1832. After their arrival at Norfolk, Mr. Bibby cast about for something to do, and engaged as a laborer on a railroad near Petersburg, Virginia, and remained in that business until September. He then purchased a horse and carry-all, and, with his wife, started overland for the western portion of Virginia. They reached Kanawha in November, 1832, and being favorably impressed with this Valley, concluded to locate in Charleston. Messrs. Daniel and Lewis Ruffner had just completed the large flouring mill which stands upon the bank of Elk river, about three hundred yards from its mouth, and Mr. Bibby, being a miller, secured a situation from them. He continued in the employment of the Messrs. Ruffner for about five years, when he purchased the mill and started in business for himself. From that time till the present Mr. Bibby has been the owner of the mill, and has kept it in almost constant operation. With the exception of two years, in which he was engaged in the manufacture of salt, Mr. Bibby has carried on no other business in the United States but milling. By industry and honest dealing he has amassed a large estate, principally in real estate, in Charleston and vicinity.

In 1860 Mr. Bibby and wife returned to England on a visit to their relatives and friends, and spent six months among old associates in the home of their youth.

They are the parents of twelve children, seven boys and five girls, six

of whom are dead. They are both in good health, and have a good prospect of many more years of life in the land of their adoption.

LUKE WILCOX.

No more philanthropic, public-spirited citizen ever lived in the Kanawha Valley than was Luke Wilcox. He was born in Onandagua county, New York, December 6, 1795. In 1811 he removed, with his parents, to Champaign county, Ohio, where he remained until 1816, when he came to Virginia and took up his residence in Kanawha county. In October, 1824, he joined the M. E. Church in Charleston, under the ministry of Rev. John H. Power, D. D., and continued steadfast in her doctrines and discipline, until

"The weary wheels of life stood still."

January 6, 1850, he was united in marriage with Miss Pinkston Kenner.

For a number of years he suffered from general debility, and with a view to the restoration of his health, he visited the island of Cuba three successive winters; but the balmy air of that sea-girt isle could not stay the progress of the wasting disease. For the last four years of his life he was mostly confined to his room. During all that time his faith was firm and unwavering, and when summoned to depart this life, he was ready, and quietly fell asleep—saved through the riches of redeeming grace.

Mr. Wilcox was a man in whom firmness and integrity were distinguishing characteristics. In all his commerce with the world there was a remarkable exactness: precision was stamped upon everything he touched.

To the church he was a true and liberal friend always actively employed to promote her interests. In 1834 he did more towards building the M. E. Church, which now stands on Virginia street, in Charleston, than any other person; and there is now in the possession of the Methodist Society in Charleston a silver service set for sacramental occasions, which was presented by him in 1836. Rev. John G. Bruce, a Methodist clergyman, was made one of the legatees in Mr. Wilcox's will, who placed \$1,000 in the hands of his executor to be paid to Mr. Bruce for preaching a funeral sermon over his remains. Mr. Wilcox died July 7, 1854, at his residence near Brownstown, and Mr. Bruce, after preaching his fu-

neral received the \$1,000. His generous heart lies quiet in the grave. His liberal hand is clutched in death. "He rests from his labors and his works do follow him."

#### SUTTON MATHEWS.

The subject of this sketch was born in Buckingham county, Virginia, February 29, 1800, and came to Kanawha in 1808. His father purchased a farm in the vicinity of the mouth of Davis creek, and located upon it. This farm is still in the possession of his descendants.

Sutton Mathews was a young man of unusual brightness of intellect, and had he been blessed with a thorough education, would have left his impress in the world. The only education he obtained was in private schools, which were both expensive and scarce; it was therefore necessarily limited. He, however, managed to procure a fair knowledge of all of the branches usually taught in common schools at that time.

After he grew to manhood, he learned the carpenter's trade, and spent a number of years building boats and barges at the Falls of Kanawha for the late Aaron Stockton, who at that time owned that property. His mind bent largely in the direction of invention, and he spent a large amount of time, for a number of years, in discovering new principles in mechanics, and applying them to the improvement of machinery. The most important inventions that he made, were a stone planer and a perambulator, for measuring distances. Neither of which, however, were patented. He also invented a large clock which accurately calculated the changes of the moon; told the hours of the day, the day of the week, and month of the year. He took up the studies of dental surgery and civil engineering, extremes from each other, and strange to say, he excelled in both of them. He was elected surveyor of Kanawha in 1843, and was continued in that responsible position until his death, which took place in 1850.

He was the first to establish the utility of cannel coal, which was discovered on Falling Rock creek of Elk river, and pronounced slate. Mr. Mathews proved to the satisfaction of all who tested it, that oil could be pressed from the coal and utilized for lubricating and illuminating

purposes. The consequence of his discovery was the erection of large oil factories at a number of points in the county, and the manufacture of coal oil, which proved profitable to the manufacturers until the discovery of petroleum in Pennsylvania, whereupon, very naturally, all of the coal oil establishments throughout the country broke down.

Mr. Mathews died in 1850, of a disease of the stomach, which, many of his friends were of opinion, was superinduced by the tasting of acids in various experiments which he was almost continually making. He was a public spirited citizen, and was highly esteemed by all who enjoyed his acquaintance.

#### GUY P. MATHEWS.

Guy P. Mathews was born in Buckingham county, Virginia, and, with his father and brother Sutton, moved to Kanawha in 1808. He now resides upon the old homestead, immediately above the mouth of Davis' Creek, four miles below Charleston, where he has spent sixty-three years of farm-life. He has always refused to become a candidate for any office; has invariably attended to his own business; has maintained an upright bearing in society, and preserved the confidence and respect of his fellow-citizens.

#### GEORGE FISHER.

George Fisher, who resides upon the large farm which he has owned for many years, about one and a-half miles south of Sissonsville, in Kanawha county, is now about eighty-four years of age. He is one of the most industrious, upright and frugal citizens of the county; and his life of hard work and close application to business, has resulted in the accumulation of a large estate, mostly of farming lands. A peculiar feature in the life of Mr. Fisher, is the fact, that he never paid any attention whatever to anybody's business but his own. He is the father of a large family, and has been permitted to enjoy the associations of his great-grandchildren. He is in good health, and superintends his business with care and correctness.



## JOHN WARTH, ESQ.

The subject of this sketch was born on the 28th of February, 1771, in the Valley of Virginia, near Winchester. His father, George Warth, whose ancestors immigrated to this country from the Isle of Man, many years before the Revolution, was a soldier in Lord Dunmore's army in the year 1774, and was with that officer, near the mouth of the Hock Hocking river, at the time the battle of Point Pleasant was fought. He afterwards served his country as a soldier in the war of the Revolution. Becoming involved, he disposed of his estate in the Valley of Virginia, and with his family, joined the fortunes of a party under General Rufus Putnam, and assisted in making the first permanent settlement in the State of Ohio, at Marietta, on the 7th of April, 1788.

His son, John Warth, being then but little over seventeen years of age, immediately entered upon the trying scenes and adventures peculiar to his new home in the wilderness, and soon distinguished himself as a marksman, a woodsman, and a hunter both of game and of the hostile Indians. In compliment to his courage, judgment and caution, he was appointed to the position of an Indian spy, whose duty it was to look out for the coming of the savages, and to give information to the settlements; in which position he served, with credit to himself, till the peace with the Indians, which followed General Wayne's great victory in the year 1795.

About the year 1803, he was appointed superintendent of the Scioto Salt Works, then operated by the State of Ohio, which position he held till about the year 1810, when, hearing of the great fortunes that were being made on the Great Kanawha in the State of Virginia, by manufacturing salt, he determined to remove to that place, purchase property, and manufacture salt on his own account, which he did, and was successful in his undertaking. He continued in this business, in the Kanawha Salines, till about the year 1818, when he sold his salt property, and removed with his family to a farm he had purchased, lying on the banks of the Ohio river, in what was then Mason county, Virginia, but now Jackson county, West Virginia.

While he resided in the county of Kanawha, he was appointed by the

Governor of Virginia a justice of the peace. When he removed to his farm, he was re-appointed to that office for the county of Mason ; and after the formation of the county of Jackson, he was again re-appointed to the same office for the new county ; which position he continued to hold till the time of his death, except for two years, when he was high sheriff of Jackson county.

He was twice married, and raised ten children—seven daughters and two sons, of whom the Hon. John A. Warth, a prominent and respected citizen of Kanawha county, is the youngest child.

There being no schools in that part of Virginia where he was raised, his attention was not attracted to the importance of an education till after his first marriage, when he was seized with a sudden impulse to educate himself. He immediately procured the necessary books, and occupied his leisure hours, without the aid of a teacher, in acquiring a knowledge of spelling, reading, writing, English grammar, geography and arithmetic ; in all of which branches he made himself proficient.

There being no school within reach of his children at his new home on the banks of the Ohio, he immediately erected a school house on his own premises, hired a teacher, and invited his neighbors, particularly the poorer people, to send their children to his school. He educated his eldest son at the Ohio University, and provided in his last will for the education of his other son. He was so infatuated with the salt business in Kanawha county, that notwithstanding the sale of his salt property, and his residing on the banks of the Ohio in another county, he purchased other salt property, and thereafter continued to be interested in the salt business in Kanawha county till his death.

When manufacturing salt in the county of Kanawha, before his removal therefrom, he owned servants enough to operate his works. When he removed, he took to his farm only such as wanted to go with him and engage in agriculture ; for the others, he found homes in the Salines, where they were acquainted and desired to remain. His servants at the farm were permitted, when not at work, to cross the Ohio river, at pleasure, into the free State of Ohio ; yet he never lost one by flight.

His will was always promptly obeyed in his family and by his servants

yet he loved, and was ever kind to them all, and in return he was dearly loved not only by his wife and children, but by his servants also. He was an upright, honest man, greatly respected by all who knew him, and particularly by the needy poor, whose wants were often supplied from his private resources. He always felt a deep interest in politics, and never failed to vote the Democratic ticket.

He died on his farm, after a lingering illness, on the 27th of October, 1837, in the sixty-seventh year of his age. The most affecting part of his death-bed scene was at his recognition of his old servant Moses, who had pressed in among the family to bid him a final farewell.

MAJOR JOHN M. DODDRIDGE.

Major Doddridge was the second son of the late Hon. Philip Doddridge, of Brooke county, the great lawyer and statesman. He was born in Pennsylvania, in 1802, and removed to Kanawha county, about 1825. He was Cashier of the Bank of Virginia, at Charleston, for many years, and was honorable and obliging in all of his business relations. During the late war he removed to Wheeling, and was appointed to the responsible office of United States Pension Agent, for the State of West Virginia, which office he continued to hold until the spring of 1871. Since that time he has resided in Charleston, serving in the capacity of Cashier of the Merchants' Bank, and other responsible positions. He has two brothers living C. E. and Philip. The former is a member of the Charleston bar, and the latter resides at Paint creek, twenty-three miles above Charleston. His brothers Yates and Biggs are both dead.

COLONEL JOEL RUFFNER.

The subject of this sketch was raised upon his beautiful farm about one mile above Charleston, on the Kanawha river, where he has lived the greater portion of his life. He is one of six brothers, all of whom were industrious farmers, and honorable and upright citizens. Colonel Ruffner was born in 1804; and in a previous chapter I have placed on record a number of his recollections of the olden times, which will be read, no doubt, with general interest. For many years he has been regarded as

one of the best and most public-spirited citizens of the county of his birth and nativity. He has held many responsible positions of trust at the hands of his fellow-citizens, and in all of them he proved to be worthy of the confidence of his friends, and faithful to all of the trusts confided to him.

MRS. SARAH KERNON HANSFORD.

Mrs. S. K. Hansford, wife of the late Felix G. Hansford, was born in Spottsylvania county, Virginia, February 10, 1795. In 1810 her parents removed to Greenbrier county, and located near the White Sulphur Springs. In 1821 she was joined in wedlock with Felix G. Hansford of Kanawha county, and shortly after their marriage, they came to the mouth of Paint creek and located on Mr. Hansford's estate at that place. Mr. Hansford was a leading citizen of Kanawha county for nearly three-quarters of a century, and, after a long and useful business life, died at his Paint Creek residence a few years since. Mrs. Hansford still occupies the old homestead, and is a vigorous and intelligent old lady. She is well read in history, and converses freely upon all subjects with which she is acquainted. She is regarded, by all who know her, as a model Christian lady, and is eminently beloved by all of her neighbors, relations and friends.

BLACKWELL CHILTON.

Mr. Chilton was born in Fauquier county, Virginia, March 21, 1783. He emigrated to Kanawha in September, 1827, and engaged in farming at different points in the county, until he became so infirm, from the advance of age, that he discontinued all his business relations, and lived with his sons and daughter for a number of years. He died in Charleston, December 1, 1872, in the ninetieth year of his age. He was an industrious, honest and enterprising gentleman, and always possessed the confidence and respect of his fellow-citizens.

DAVID SHIRKEY.

David Shirkey has resided on the Pocatalico river, near Sissonsville, for more than half a century. He is an industrious, honorable citizen, and

is one of the leading farmers of the county. He is about seventy-three years of age ; is the father of a large family, and is universally respected by all with whom he associates.

REUBEN SLAUGHTER.

The father of Mr. Slaughter was the first surveyor of Kanawha county, and was one of the first men who came to Kanawha from the Greenbrier colony. The old gentleman has been in his grave for many years. His son lived to be quite an aged citizen, dying in 1875. He resided three miles west of Charleston, on the Point Pleasant turnpike, and for many years was rarely seen outside of his farm limits.

JOHN SLACK, SR.

John Slack, Sr., son of John Slack, and brother of the late Greenbury Slack, was born near Charleston, in Kanawha county, in 1810. In early life he began business in Charleston, which he prosecuted for nearly half a century, in various gradations—such as constable, deputy sheriff, salt manufacturer, sheriff, merchant, clerk of the circuit court, recorder of the county, &c. Mr. Slack's indorsement by the people, in so many responsible positions, is evidence of his popularity in his native county, as well as his fitness for office. He is a man of superior business capacity, is honest, upright, frugal, industrious and deserving. In every office to which he was elected by his fellow-citizens, he gave ample satisfaction, and acquitted himself with credit.

REV. JOHN SNYDER.

Mr. Snyder was one of the first settlers of the Kanawha Valley. He was in every respect an old-time man, but was, nevertheless, a leader among men. He was a local preacher in the M. E. Church for over half a century, and accomplished much for the cause of Christianity by his zeal and devotion to the work of his Master. He was among the first who preached the Gospel in Kanawha county ; and while his education was limited, his ideas were clear, and his language forcible and effective. He was literally filled with Gospel grace, and his daily life was

a perfect exemplification of the religion he taught. He removed to Queen Shoals, on Elk river, perhaps forty years ago, and died at the residence of his son, Daniel B. Snyder, a few years since, exemplifying the completeness and triumphs of redeeming grace.

JAMES TRUSLOW.

James Truslow, the father of Mary, wife of the late George H. Patrick; of Elizabeth, wife of the late Rev. Charles R. Baldwin, and of America, John, James, William, and Charles Truslow, was born in Virginia in 1778, and, from early youth to manhood, lived in Fredericksburgh. He married Agnes Mosby Finch, in Columbia, Fluvana county, in 1807; came to Charleston, Kanawha county, in 1811, and died in Charleston, August 4, 1830.

But few men ever lived who had that entire respect and confidence of a community, which Mr. James Truslow possessed in the county of Kanawha. He was distinguished for his industry. In business he was prompt and strictly honest—so much so, that he was never known to make a promise which was not punctually kept; and it was often said of him, that “James Truslow’s word was as good as his bond.” In a long and extensive business life, he never had a suit in court, and could not tolerate dishonesty or hypocrisy in any one.

He was a quiet, unpretending Christian, and his faith and trust in “Jesus Christ, the Rock of Ages,” was unmovable. He was the principal in the erection of the first church in Charleston, and although it was called “the Methodist church,” it was often occupied by other religious denominations. Before the erection of this church, religious services were held at the dwelling-house of Mr. Truslow, and for many years his house was the preacher’s home.

At his burial, the services were conducted by the Rev. William Herr, of the Ohio Conference, Methodist Episcopal Church, who is still living, and the Rev. Nathaniel W. Calhoun, of the Presbyterian church, who recently departed this life in Virginia. A large number of his fellow-citizens were present to pay the last tribute of respect to one they respected and loved.

## JAMES JOPLING.

Among the very first persons who came to Kanawha, was James Jopling. He purchased a homestead on the waters of Mill Creek, Elk river shortly after the beginning of the present century, and resided there until the time of his death, which occurred about ten years ago. He was a man of powerful frame, and loved adventure. He was a noted trapper, hunter, and Indian fighter, and delighted in relating his narrow escapes and wonderful feats in woods life. He has a number of relatives who reside upon and in the vicinity of the old homestead, on Jopling's branch,

## WILLIAM D. SHREWSBURY.

W. D. Shrewsbury, son of Joel Shrewsbury, Sr., has been a citizen of prominence in Kanawha county for a great many years. The greater portion of his life has been spent in the manufacture of salt, and the business of general merchandising. Mr. Shrewsbury is a gentleman who possesses much more than ordinary intelligence, and has always been regarded as strictly honest and fair in all his dealings. He resides in Malden, and is the father of a large family.

## COLONEL WILLIAM DICKINSON.

Colonel Dickinson is the only son of William Dickinson, Sr., who was one of the leading salt makers of the Kanawha Valley for over fifty years. He was born in Bedford county, Virginia, but has spent the greater portion of his life in Kanawha. He is now upwards of eighty years of age, and is residing upon his magnificent farm on the Kanawha river, fifteen miles above Charleston. He has a princely estate, and seems to enjoy himself in his retired farm life. He never would accept any office—never owed anybody anything, always lived up to his promises, and has the respect of all persons who ever had any dealings with him. Kanawha has no better citizen than Colonel William Dickinson, and no kinder hearted gentleman ever lived in the Valley of the Great Kanawha. He always looks at the sunny side of everything, and therefore necessarily enjoys life.

## SPICER PATRICK, M. D.

Dr. Patrick has always refused, at every opportunity, to allow anything to be published that was personal to himself. I can only say, therefore, that he has been one of the most prominent citizens of this portion of the State for over a-half century. For many years he was the most noted physician in the Kanawha Valley; and he has also figured prominently in the political history of the Valley. He was frequently elected to the Legislature of this State, as a member of either House, when the Virginias were one; and since the formation of West Virginia, he has likewise served in the same capacities in the Legislature of this State. He was a strenuous Union man during the late war, and did much to prevent the passage of the Ordinance of Secession by the Virginia Convention of 1860. Prior to the war he was a Whig, but for several years past he has acted with the Democratic party. Dr. Patrick is now eighty-five years of age. He resides upon his farm, one and a-half miles west of Charleston, and is in the enjoyment of comparatively good health.

## JAMES HENRY FRY.

James H. Fry, son of Reuben Fry, who married Ann C. Slaughter, was born in Culpepper county, Virginia, December 27, 1798, and came to Charleston in October, 1818. He studied law in the office of his brother, the late Judge Joseph L. Fry, and was admitted to the bar, but abandoned the practice, and engaged in more active business pursuits. He was a salt maker in the Salines for a number of years; was deputy sheriff for two or three terms, and was sheriff of the county for four consecutive years. He served two terms in the lower branch of the Virginia Legislature, and one term in the State Senate. Mr. Fry was an excellent business man, and was universally respected by every one who knew him. He died at his residence in Charleston, June 26, 1863. His wife, and several sons and daughters, still reside in Charleston.

## EZRA WALKER.

Ezra Walker was born in the State of Vermont in 1802, and in early life moved to Ohio, where he graduated at the Ohio University at Athens.



Shortly after completing his course of study in college, he came to Virginia, and taught school at the Kanawha Salines for a short time. He then came to Charleston and studied and practiced law until 1832, when he relinquished the same to discharge the then onerous duties of principal superintendent of the James River and Kanawha improvements, which extended from Covington to the Ohio River.

In 1832 Mr. Walker married Miss Mary Smith, of Staunton, Virginia. Shortly after her marriage she died, and in 1849 Mr. Walker married Julia Shephard, by whom he had two children, Ezra and Kate, who now reside in Kanawha county. In March, 1853, owing to excessive fatigue and exposure in discharging his duties as superintendent of the James River and Kanawha improvements, he died at Mud Bridge, at the residence of Mr. Reece, in the county of Cabell, and his remains now rest in the Wilson Cemetery at Charleston. At the time of his death, his home was in the county of Greenbrier, a short distance west of Lewisburg.

Mr. Walker was a ripe and finished scholar, the early friend and associate of the late distinguished Judge George W. Summers, with whom he graduated at the Ohio University, and was the warm and confidential friend of Judge Lewis Summers; to be such, was evidence of his worth and standing, intellectually, morally and religiously. For many years Mr. Walker was an Elder in the Presbyterian church in Charleston, and also in Lewisburg. He was a liberal and working member and officer of the church, and the sincere friend of the late Dr. James M. Brown, for many years the pastor of the Charleston church, and of Dr. McElhenny, pastor of the church at Lewisburg.

Mr. Walker was truly a Christian gentleman, and wherever known was loved and respected. In his life and character, humanity was seen in its best phase, and with as little imperfection as is ever seen in human nature.

#### EDMUND SAUNDERS.

Mr. Saunders was born in Dingle, county of Carey, Ireland, in November, 1774, which, if his chronology is correct, makes him more than a

centenarian. He emigrated to the United States in 1845, and spent about six months in New York city. He then removed to Virginia, and worked on different railroads in the eastern portion of the State until 1863, when he came to Charleston, where he still resides. He never had a serious illness, and is now in the enjoyment of good health. Age, however, has bent his once stalwart frame, and it is now with great difficulty that he walks about. He voted in the late State and Presidential elections, but was taken to the polls in a carriage. If his memory is reliable, and his relations insist that it is, he is the oldest man I have found who now resides in Kanawha county.

JOEL SHREWSBURY, SR.

One of the most noted men who ever lived in the Great Kanawha Valley was Joel Shrewsbury, Senior. He came from Bedford county to Kanawha in 1813, and engaged in the manufacture of salt with Colonel William Dickinson, Sr., continuing the same until 1856, when the partnership of Dickinson & Shrewsbury was dissolved. Mr. Shrewsbury died in Kanawha in 1857, at the advanced age of eighty-four years. He has hundreds of relatives now living in the county, many of whom are among the wealthiest and most distinguished of our citizens.

COLONEL WILLIAM DICKINSON, SR.

Colonel Dickinson was born in Bedford county, Virginia, and came to Kanawha with Joel Shrewsbury, Sr., in 1813. He and Mr. Shrewsbury had been engaged in the manufacture of tobacco in Bedford county from 1804, and after their arrival in Kanawha, they formed a partnership in the manufacture of salt, which business they continued until 1856. Colonel Dickinson died in 1862, at the advanced age of about ninety-three. His son William is still living, and quite a number of his grand-children are also residing in the county.

FRANKLIN NOYES.

Mr. Noyes was born in Columbia county, New York, in 1793, and emigrated to Kanawha in 1826. Soon after his arrival in Kanawha

county, he engaged in mercantile pursuits, which he followed, without intermission, for thirty years. During the latter part of his life he manufactured salt, which did not prove profitable. He died in April, 1856, in the sixty-third year of his age. Not long after he came to this county he married Miss Nancy Venable, by whom he had nine children, viz: Bradford, Catharine, Isaac, Philip H., Franklin, William A., Charles, James B. and Benjamin. Three of them are dead, viz: Bradford, Isaac and Catharine. The other six are still living, and reside in Charleston.

BRADFORD NOYES, SR.

Mr. Noyes was born in Columbia county, New York, in 1788, and was a brother of the late Isaac and Franklin Noyes, who were prominent citizens of Kanawha for many years. He came here in 1809, and engaged in the business of merchandising, salt-making, &c., which he followed diligently for more than forty years, thus accumulating a handsome estate. He had four children, viz: Mary, Annie, James Bradford and Emma, all of whom are living, except Mary, the wife of John C. Ruby, who died in 1867. Mr. Noyes died in 1850, in the sixty-second year of his age.

GEORGE GOSHORN.

George Goshorn, the father of a large family of the best and most honorable citizens of Charleston, was born in Pennsylvania in 1789. When thirty-three years of age he came to Kanawha, and engaged in business. Mr. Goshorn was a man of enterprise, and through energy and application to business, accumulated a considerable estate. He was a man of strict integrity, and maintained a good character till the time of his death, which took place at his residence in Charleston, June 24, 1845. He had five sons, viz: John H., William F., Jacob, George, Alvin and David A. All of whom are living except David, who died in 1870. They are all men of good character, and are leading citizens of Kanawha county.

## COLORED CITIZENS.

Having furnished sketches of a large number of the aged white citizens of Kanawha county, I desire to notice a few old colored men, who, from their advanced age and good behavior, are worthy of special mention.

## ISRAEL RUE.

The oldest man now living in Kanawha county is Israel Rue, colored, who resides on Davis' creek, seven miles south of Charleston. He was born in Mifflin county, Pennsylvania, March 5, 1777. He was owned by Samuel Gallaway, and when he was eight years of age he was sold to James Gilkerson, of Scott county, Kentucky. According to the laws of Pennsylvania, all slaves born after the passage of the Declaration of Independence were to be made free at the age of twenty-eight. This law was afterwards changed, granting freedom at the age of twenty-one. After Uncle Israel reached the age of twenty-eight, he brought suit for his freedom at Newport, Kentucky, and employed Hon. Richard M. Johnson, who afterwards became Vice-President of the United States, as his attorney, promising him one year's labor for his fee. He obtained his freedom, but Mr. Johnson did not require him to work the full year.

He came to Kanawha shortly after the beginning of the present century, to labor for Robert Johnson, the father of Hon. Richard M. Johnson, who was at that time manufacturing salt above the mouth of Campbell's creek, on the lands of Colonel David Ruffner. Mr. Johnson, however, did not reside in the valley longer than two years, but Uncle Israel, being favorably impressed with the country, and the salt manufacturing business, remained in Kanawha, and although nearly one hundred years of age, he is still here.

Uncle Israel is small in stature, and was once very active. A few weeks since, he walked from his homestead on Davis' creek to Charleston, a distance of seven miles, and returned the next day, without material injury. He connected himself with the Baptist church a few years since, and is confident that, although he spent over ninety-five years in worldly life, he is now saved through the riches of redeeming Grace.

## NOAH COLLY.

Noah Colly came to Kanawha about 1814. He was a tall, stout mulatto, and drove a dray in Charleston for a full half-century, or longer. He was the only undertaker in Charleston during about forty years. The carpenters always made the burial cases, while uncle Noah drove the hearse, and laid the dead in their graves. He was sexton of the Presbyterian church for a great many years. He was made free in early life, and prized his liberties very highly, although he was not overbearing or insulting in his nature or demeanor. He died in 1869, at the age of seventy-six. His funeral took place from the Presbyterian church, and was largely attended, by both white and colored citizens.

## RANDALL MILLER.

Randall Miller, better known in Kanawha as "Uncle Dock, the teamster," was born at Goochland Court-House, Virginia, on the James river, forty miles from Richmond, about the year 1795. He was a slave, and had no means of knowing exactly when he was born. The nearest that he can arrive at his age, is from the fact, that he was nearly grown when the war of 1812 with Great Britain took place. He was owned by Humphrey Paraish, and at the marriage of his daughter with Willis McKain, uncle Dock became the property of the latter.

Mr. McKain moved to Charlottesville, when Uncle Dock was about eighteen years of age, and hired him to the person who had the contract for building the main building of the University of Virginia. He remained there three years, and says that he saw President Jefferson nearly every day during that time. From Charlottesville he moved with his master, Mr. McKain, to Cabell county, where he remained for about fifteen years. When about thirty-five years of age, he was sold to Ezra Walker, who brought him to Charleston, and for eleven years he drove a team for Mr. Frederick Brooks, during which time he laid by a sufficiency of money, with which he purchased his freedom.

After he became free, he purchased a team, and drove a hack between Charleston and the most celebrated mineral springs in the Alleghany

Mountains, during the summer seasons ; while in the winter, he did job work with his team in and about Charleston. He is now too old to perform hard labor, yet he is in good health, and does not seem to be very much inconvenienced from his advanced age.

## CHAPTER XXI.

## MISCELLANEOUS.

Newspapers which have been published in Charleston—Names and Publishers—Interesting Selections from County Records—Soldiers of 1812 who went out from Kanawha county—Modern Charleston—Location of the State Capital—Prominent Buildings—Mobbing of Dawson, Estep and Hines—County and City Officers—Formation of Charleston Gas Light Company—Other Towns in the County—Educational Advantages—Post Offices, Etc.

As one has undertaken to chronicle and classify history, he finds many things of importance, when retrospecting the field over which he has gone, that had been entirely overlooked. I have sought thus far, however, to classify each subject, event, or occurrence, under its proper heading, so as to avoid the confusing, in arrangement, one chapter with another; and it shall be my purpose to preserve this order until the end of the work.

## NEWSPAPERS.

Charleston, although a town of insignificant proportions, has had an unusual number of newspapers. As a rule, you may measure a town or city by its newspapers. One who is skilled in the business of journalism can readily pass upon the character and enterprise of the business men of a town or village, by their methods of advertising; and his judgment, thus passed, will almost invariably be correct. If the business men of a town do not advertise in their local newspapers, as a rule, their stores are dark, gloomy-looking places; there will be no enterprise displayed, and the proprietors, by constant application, manage only to eke out a poor support for their families. *Per contra*, if they carry a half column or more of an advertisement, you will find them doing business in large, elegant store-rooms, with glass fronts, having long show-cases upon their counters, while their goods will be displayed in an attractive and tasteful manner.

I do not make these statements in consequence of having spent the greater portion of my life, thus far, in a newspaper office, but because I have carefully examined into the matter in a number of towns, in this and other States, and have invariably found the local newspapers infallible exponents of the characters of the people in the towns where they are published.

The first newspaper established in Charleston, was started in 1820, and called the *Kanawha Patriot*, published by Herbert P. Gaines. It was a small, but neatly executed paper, and was kept alive only a little over a year.

From 1820 to 1822, Mason Campbell, Esq., who is now, and has been for thirty years past, a resident of Washington, D. C., published a newspaper in Charleston, called the *Western Courier*. For want of proper patronage, it went down. But in 1825, the same gentleman started another paper, styled the *Western Virginian*, the publication of which he kept up weekly until 1829, when he sold it to Alexander T. and James M. Laidley, who changed the name to the *Western Register*, which they published one year.

Shortly after the Messrs. Laidley ceased to publish the *Register*, Mason Campbell and Ezra Walker started the *Kanawha Banner*, and continued its publication till 1834, when it was succeeded by a small Whig paper, styled the *Kanawha Patriot*.

In 1840, Messrs. Pate & Hickey established the *Jeffersonian*, which was the first Democratic newspaper ever published in Kanawha. Kanawha being a Whig county, the *Jeffersonian* found but few supporters, and at the expiration of two years, its publication ceased.

In 1842, Enos W. Newton, a gentleman of culture and refinement, located in Kanawha, and began the publication of the *Kanawha Republican*, as an organ of the Whig party. He continued the publication of the *Republican* until his death, in 1865, when it was purchased by Merrill & Quigley, who published it up to 1871, when it was sold as old material.

Mr. Newton, its founder, was one of the ablest of writers, and was respected by every one who knew him. Education was his special theme.



No man in Kanawha did so much towards establishing a general system of education in this country as did Enos W. Newton. It was seemingly his meat and drink, to educate the rising generation. For twenty-five years, no school examination of any note, was ever held in Kanawha county, that Mr. Newton did not attend and conduct the exercises. His death, at a ripe old age, was lamented by thousands of our citizens.

The second Democratic paper published in Charleston, was the *Western Virginian*, by R. A. Thompson and T. M. Gardner, in 1851, continued two or three years, until, like its predecessor, it perished for want of proper support. The *Virginian* was succeeded by the *Kanawha Valley Star*, which was published by John Rundell and edited by several legal gentlemen, members of the Kanawha bar. Its publication ceased about the beginning of the late war for the Union.

In 1864, Messrs. S. S. and E. T. Moore established the *West Virginia Journal*, which was the first paper in the county that espoused the principles of the Republican party. In March, 1864, George W. Atkinson purchased a half interest in it, and became its editor. In September, 1870, A. F. Gibbens, of Parkersburg, purchased a one-third interest in the paper, when it was enlarged and generally improved. Messrs. Gibbens and Atkinson continued its publication as editors and business managers until September, 1876, when it was purchased by W. L. Moore & Co., who are at this time, its publishers.

In 1870, Henry S. Walker & Co., established the *West Virginia Courier*, first as a weekly, afterwards as a daily, and finally as a tri-weekly. It is Democratic in politics, and is at present published by R. P. Warren as proprietor and business manager.

In 1870, Rev. J. B. Hardwicke, D. D., removed the *Baptist Record*, a religious newspaper, from Parkersburg to this place, and continued its publication for about two years, when it was discontinued for want of material support. Previous to this time, Rev. W. G. Miller, of the Western Virginia Conference, M. E. Church, South, published a monthly paper from the *Kanawha Republican* office, called the *Primitive Methodist*, which failed for the same reason as did the *Baptist Record*.

In 1870, John Brisben Walker of Pennsylvania, came to Kanawha,

purchased several hundred acres of lands, made an addition to Charleston called "West End," and established a weekly newspaper, independent in politics, named the *Charleston Herald*. He continued its publication for about two years, when it was sold out as old material.

In 1871, Thomas Hughes & Co. established the first daily newspaper ever published in Kanawha, called the *Kanawha Daily*. Its publication was continued only a few months, the fact having been satisfactorily developed that the business of the town was not sufficient to support a daily paper.

In 1872, Mr. Charles B. Webb, of Wayne county, came to Kanawha and started the publication of a weekly independent newspaper, styled the *Kanawha Chronicle*. In the campaign of 1876, the *Chronicle* declared itself in the interests of the Democratic party.

#### OLD COUNTY RECORDS.

In another chapter I gave the reader a few choice selections from the early records of Kanawha county. Below I give a few more "gems," which, no doubt, will be read with general interest:

"August 6th, 1793—Ordered, that the clerk of this Court be allowed four thousand eight hundred weight of Tobacco, for his services as clerk for four years last past, and that Thomas Lewis be allowed thirty-three hundred weight of Tobacco, for extra services performed by him, as Sheriff, from the fifth day of October, 1786, until the second day of July, 1792.

"And that William Clendennin be allowed thirteen hundred pounds of Tobacco for his services as Sheriff, from the second of July, 1792, to August 9th, 1793, and that George Clendennin be allowed nineteen hundred and twenty pounds for book furnished for the use of this county, and that a deposit of ten thousand weight of Tobacco, be applied to the use of the county; and that the Sheriff do proceed to collect the above quantity of Tobacco and settle with the Court at February Term next."

"August 6th, 1793—Ordered, that Elizabeth Alsbuy be represented to his excellency, the Governor of the Commonwealth, for the following benign and hospitable acts, to-wit: Having carried John Shepherd

and John Carter, soldiers then in service, who belonged to Captain John Morris' ranging Company of Militia, who were wounded, the former on the 11th day of May, 1792, and the latter on the 4th day of July, 1792, and taking care of them."

October 8th, 1799—On the motion of Stephen Teays, it is ordered that a ferry be established across Coal river, from the land of Stephen Teays and Charles Davis, to the land of General George Washington, and across the Kanawha river from said Teays' land to the land of Fry and others, on the opposite shore ; and that the rate of ferriage across Coal river, be eight cents, and the rate across Kanawha river, be twelve cents. And that Louis Newton be allowed \$4.00 for making two pair hand-cuffs, to be paid for out of the County levy."

#### SOLDIERS OF 1812.

Through the kindness of Thomas J. Mathews, I have been furnished with the original muster roll of Captain John Wilson's company of riflemen attached to the second Regiment and first Brigade of Virginia troops, in the war with Great Britain in 1812-14. The company was made up in Kanawha county, and consisted of fifty-six men. John Wilson was Captain ; Robert Wilson, his younger brother, was Lieutenant ; William C. Wilson, Ensign ; Johan Bagby, Orderly Sergeant ; Dabney Jones, second Sergeant ; John Sisson, third Sergeant ; Hiram Cobbs, fourth Sergeant ; Chrisholm Ellis, first Corporal ; Henry Cartmill, second Corporal ; John Fisher, Musician, and the following privates : George Weldy, William Fowler, James Fowler, John Donnally, Asa Fowler, Thomas Casdorph, Isham Baily, Langston Ward, Joseph Dawson, Alexander Taylor, John Medly, Jacob Casdorph, Thomas Mathews, Alexander Cartwright, Thomas Parish, Joshua Fowler, John Ray, Gabriel Dawson, Thomas Milam, Andrew Slaughter, John Campbell, Thomas Cobbs, Moses Milam, Thomas Lowe, Solomon Casdorph, Thomas Hensley, James Henseley, John Guthrie, Archibald Price, Edmund Mice, John Smith, Malcom McCown, Roger Paull, Samuel Priestly, Joseph Stitt, James Newport, Leonard Fisher, Elisha Smith, Moses Brown, Henry McLaughlin, Luke Shiverdecker, Simeon Milam, James McCown, Leonard Cooper, Joel Rucker and John Cooper.

The regiment to which this company belonged was commanded by Colonel John Ambler. The soldiers were discharged at Richmond in December, 1814. Luke Shiverdecker, who resides near St. Albans in this county, is the only member of Captain Wilson's company who is now living, and he is quite old and infirm. He is hanging upon the verge of the grave, and will shortly be numbered with his dead comrades, who were noble in life and beautiful in death.

The roll book, which contained a list of the members of Captain Wilson's company, also contains his daily requisitions upon the quartermaster's and commissary departments for supplies. The following requisition is a literal copy from the record :

" RICHMOND, VA., October 8, 1814.

" The Quarter-Master General will issue fifty-one scabbards and belts, fifty-one scalping knives, and fifty-one tomahawks, for the use of this company.

JOHN WILSON, CAPTAIN."

" Received an order on Captain Staples for above.

JOHN WILSON, CAPTAIN."

The articles principally used by Captain Wilson's company, as shown by his requisitions, were blankets, gun-flints, powder, lead, ladles, and rations. A daily report was made, showing the condition of the company, and the camp equipage on hand. In his report of August 26, 1814, Robert Wilson, Lieutenant commanding the company, reported the following articles on hand : Rifles, fifty-three ; bullet moulds, fifty-three ; shot-pouches, fifty-two ; powder-horns, fifty-two ; worms, fifty-three ; worms and screws, fifty-three ; gun-sticks, fifty-three ; picks, fifty-three ; chargers, fifty-three ; tomahawks, fifty-one ; tomahawk belts, fifty-three ; canteens, thirty ; knapsacks, fifty-one, balls, two hundred and twenty ; pounds of powder, twelve ; flints, one hundred and fifteen ; ladles, two ; swords, two ; common tents, nine ; sets of tent poles, ten ; camp kettles, ten ; pots and ovens, six ; tin pans, four ; axes, five ; company books, one ; quill-pens, three ; wafers, fifty.

The above records of a company of soldiers made up exclusively from

Kanawha county, sixty-four years ago, will, no doubt, be read with special interest by the citizens of the county for many years to come.

#### MODERN CHARLESTON.

At the close of the war, in 1865, Charleston had a population of less than 2,000 souls. Business, however, seemed to take a new departure, so to speak; new houses went up at a rapid rate, and within less than two years the population more than doubled. The streets and sidewalks were greatly improved; merchants enlarged their store-rooms and their stocks of goods; saw-mills and founderies were established, new hotels were put up, and, in 1870, the town was incorporated as "a city of the second class."

In 1869 the Legislature of the State located the Capital at Charleston, and in May, 1870, the archives were brought hither. The year following, the Capitol building, on Capitol street, was completed, at a cost of \$70,000 to a few enterprising citizens of the town, and the State officers took charge of their respective departments in the building.



CAPITOL BUILDING.

The Honorable William E. Stevenson, of Wood county, was at that time Governor of the State. The location of the Capital at Charleston, gave a new impetus to the business of the town and surrounding country. The price of real estate advanced at a rapid rate, and a large number of persons came to Kanawha and embarked in business. The population of the city, when at its maximum, was about seven thousand, and the prevailing impression was that it would, in a very few years, become a leading commercial center, and necessarily a great city.

The location of the seat of government at Charleston, under the Constitution which then existed, was permanent; but the adoption of a new Constitution, in 1872, re-opened the question, and the Legislature immediately sought to effect a removal from Charleston. No reasons were assigned by the advocates for removal, except that the Kanawha valley

was too remote from the north-western portion of the State ; hence they desired to have the capital situated at a point more convenient to them. This kind of argument, if such it can be called, prevailed, and in 1875 the seat of government was removed to the city of Wheeling. The result of this unfair dealing towards Charleston, was the general stagnation of business, and a decrease in population of upwards of one thousand souls. It is thought, however, that business will again revive, and in the course of a few years, on account of the vast deposits of valuable minerals in close proximity, Charleston will be the leading city of the State.

#### HALE HOUSE.

The Hale House is not only the largest and most magnificent hotel in Charleston, but is the largest in the Kanawha Valley. It was built by Dr. John P. Hale in 1870, at a cost of \$75,000. It is four stories above the basement, contains 100 rooms, and is elegantly furnished. It was kept by Dr. Hale for several years, and is now under lease to Mr. W. T. Thayer. It is one of the finest hotels in the South.

#### MOBBING OF DAWSON AND ESTEP.

On Christmas eve, 1875, two young men, about twenty years of age, John Dawson and Rufus Estep, murdered Thomas Lee at the Campbell's creek iron bridge, six miles above Charleston. They were arrested the next day and lodged in prison in Charleston. The associates of Mr. Lee, thus so brutally murdered, resolved to avenge his death by lynching Dawson and Estep. Sheriff P. W. Morgan and his deputies, John W. Sentz, John T. S. Perry and Silas Morgan, were the custodians of the jail, and having learned of the approaching of the mob, they moved the prisoners, under the cover of night, to the Cabell county jail, and from thence, a day or two afterwards, they were taken to the Parkersburg jail for protection.

Meantime the county court assembled, and the court and prosecuting attorney decided that there was no danger of further violence from the mob, and ordered the sheriff to return the prisoners to the jail of Kanawha county. The sheriff, under protest, obeyed orders, and returned

the prisoners. The mob at once re-organized, announced itself ready for "business," and positively ordered the court to try the prisoners immediately and execute them, or it would take the matter in hand and let "Judge Lynch" do the hanging. On Tuesday, the 24th day of January, 1876, the circuit court, Judge Joseph Smith presiding, ordered the prisoners, Dawson and Estep, to be brought before him. The attorneys for the prisoners asked the court for a change of venue, on account of the presence of an armed mob which prevented justice from being done to their clients. The question was ably argued by R. H. Freer and Abram Burlew, counsel for the prisoners, in favor of a change of venue, and by John E. Kenna, attorney for the State, assisted by Judge James H. Ferguson, against it. The Judge withheld his decision until the next morning, and that night the prisoners were taken from jail by a mob of three hundred men, and were hung on the bridge over Campbell's creek, where they had murdered Thomas Lee a few weeks previous.

#### LYNCHING OF THOMAS HINES.

At about five o'clock on the afternoon of Tuesday, January 24, 1876, Thomas Hines, a journeyman tailor, cut the throat of J. W. Dooley, a colored shoe-maker on Alderson street, who died within twenty-five minutes thereafter. Hines was placed in prison, and when the mob came down from Campbell's creek for the purpose of lynching Dawson and Estep, about fifty colored men joined them at the jail, took Hines out and marched him in company with the other two prisoners to Campbell's creek bridge. While the white mob was executing Dawson and Estep at the bridge, the colored mob marched its prisoner a few hundred yards above, and hung him to the limb of a honey-locust tree. All three of the dead bodies were taken down the next morning, and were interred under the directions of the officers of the law. Thus ended the only lynching that ever took place in the county of Kanawha. Being an eye-witness of the entire procedure, I hope I shall never be called upon to behold another sight so dreadful and appalling.

#### KANAWHA COUNTY,

Kanawha county cannot be considered as possessing agricultural ad-

vantages, except in a very limited degree. It is rich only in its mineral resources, and its timber. The soil, however, is quite productive ; but outside of the river and creek valleys, the land is so broken that it will not pay for cultivation. The time is not distant, however, when it will be one of the wealthiest portions of the globe—when the blazes rushing from the smoke-stacks of great rolling-mills, founderies and furnaces, will produce, in this Valley, perpetual day. The iron, the coal, the clay, the salt, the lime, are all here, and only need money and muscle to develop them. The population of the county is about 23,000, and the value of the taxable property is \$7,000,000.

## PRESENT COUNTY OFFICERS.

Joseph Smith, Esq., Judge of the Kanawha Circuit Court ; William L. Hindman, Esq., President of the County Court ; Philip W. Morgan, Sheriff ; John E. Kenna, Prosecuting Attorney ; W. E. G. Gillison, Clerk of the Circuit Court ; Joel S. Quarrier, Clerk of the County Court ; Martin Hill, Superintendent of Public Schools ; Silas Morgan, Jailor ; Thomas J. Mathews, Surveyor, and Henry A. Shirkey and James Calvert, Assessors.

## CHARLESTON CITY OFFICERS.

Hon. John C. Ruby, Mayor ; Joseph L. Fry, Recorder ; H. W. Rand, Sergeant, and Chief of Police ; John W. Sentz, Valentine Kieffer, C. P. Snyder, Fielding Starke, W. S. Laidley, Dr. Daniel Mayer, Meredith Price, William T. Kiger and John A. Gibson, Councilmen ; Luallen Saunders, Engineer of the Fire Department, and Nelson Mahan, Street Commissioner.

## GAS LIGHT COMPANY.

The Charleston Gas Light Company was organized in 1870, by electing Dr. John P. Hale, a public-spirited citizen, President, and Charles Ward, Superintendent. The town was first supplied with gas in May of that year, and there are at present four miles of gas mains within the corporation. It is a paying institution, and affords great comfort and convenience to the residents of the town.



## OTHER TOWNS IN THE COUNTY.

St. Albans, at the confluence of Coal and Kanawha rivers, twelve miles below Charleston, is the largest town in the county, except Charleston. It has a population of about fifteen hundred souls, and is in a flourishing and prosperous condition. Malden, six miles above Charleston, on the Kanawha river, has a population of about five hundred; Coalburgh, seventeen miles above Charleston, is also a thrifty village of four or five hundred inhabitants, mostly miners; Hampton, Blacksburg, Hansford and Cannelton above it, and Lewiston and Brownstown below, are all villiages of considerable size, and sometime in the future will be important mining and manufacturing towns.

## EDUCATION.

Kanawha county has a good and effective system of common schools, but is deficient in higher institutions of learning. For a number of years the Charleston Institute was conducted under the supervision of the Presbyterian church, but, despite the central location, and other natural advantages which it possessed, it could not be rendered self-supporting, and was allowed to go down. The time is not distant, however, when an influential, paying University will be established at Charleston, or some other point in the Kanawha Valley. It is most certainly needed, and its establishment is only a matter of time.

## POST-OFFICES.

Charleston is the leading post-office in the southern part of the State. There are also post offices at the following points within the county: St. Albans, Upper Falls of Coal, Sissonsville, Pocatalico, Copenhaver's Mills, Forks of Little Sandy, Kanawha Salines, Brownstown, Givvon, Kendall's Mills, Coalburgh, Hampton, Lewiston, Paint Creek, Cannelton, Piny Grove, Jarrett's Ford, Reynold's Store, and Clendennin.

THE END.



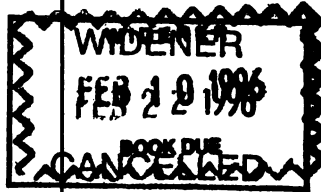






1986  
J  
11.  
THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED  
THE COST OF OVERDUE NOTIFICATION  
IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO  
THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST  
DATE STAMPED BELOW.

COPY DUE WLD  
87 28437  
JUN 29 1988



3 2044 018 70

